## ABSTRACT

# of dissertation: STATISTICAL METHODS FOR ADVANCED ECONOMETRIC MODELS WITH APPLICATIONS TO VEHICLE HOLDING AND SPEED QUANTILES DISTRIBUTION 

Jean-Michel Tremblay, 2016<br>Dissertation directed by: Associate Professor Cinzia Cirillo Department of Civil and Environmental Engineering

This dissertation proposes statistical methods to formulate, estimate and apply complex transportation models. Two main problems are part of the analyses conducted and presented in this dissertation.

The first method solves an econometric problem and is concerned with the joint estimation of models that contain both discrete and continuous decision variables. The use of ordered models along with a regression is proposed and their effectiveness is evaluated with respect to unordered models. Procedure to calculate and optimize the log-likelihood functions of both discrete-continuous approaches are derived, and difficulties associated with the estimation of unordered models explained. Numerical approximation methods based on the Genz algortithm are implemented in order to solve the multidimensional integral associated with the unordered modeling structure. The problems deriving from the lack of smoothness of the probit model around the maximum of the log-likelihood function, which makes the optimization
and the calculation of standard deviations very difficult, are carefully analyzed. A methodology to perform out-of-sample validation in the context of a joint model is proposed. Comprehensive numerical experiments have been conducted on both simulated and real data. In particular, the discrete-continuous models are estimated and applied to vehicle ownership and use models on data extracted from the 2009 National Household Travel Survey.

The second part of this work offers a comprehensive statistical analysis of free-flow speed distribution; the method is applied to data collected on a sample of roads in Italy. A linear mixed model that includes speed quantiles in its predictors is estimated. Results show that there is no road effect in the analysis of free-flow speeds, which is particularly important for model transferability. A very general framework to predict random effects with few observations and incomplete access to model covariates is formulated and applied to predict the distribution of freeflow speed quantiles. The speed distribution of most road sections is successfully predicted; jack-knife estimates are calculated and used to explain why some sections are poorly predicted.

Eventually, this work contributes to the literature in transportation modeling by proposing econometric model formulations for discrete-continuous variables, more efficient methods for the calculation of multivariate normal probabilities, and random effects models for free-flow speed estimation that takes into account the survey design. All methods are rigorously validated on both real and simulated data.

# STATISTICAL METHODS FOR ADVANCED ECONOMETRIC MODELS WITH APPLICATIONS TO VEHICLE HOLDING AND SPEED QUANTILES DISTRIBUTION 

by<br>Jean-Michel Tremblay

Dissertation submitted to the Faculty of the Graduate School of the University of Maryland, College Park in partial fulfillment of the requirements for the degree of Doctor of Philosophy 2016

Advisory Committee:
Associate Professor Cinzia Cirillo, Chair/Advisor
Professor Paul M. Schonfeld
Professor Partha Lahiri
Associate Professor Fabian Bastin
Dr. Sevgi Erdoğan
(C) Copyright by

Jean-Michel Tremblay
2016

## Acknowledgments

This work would not have been possible without the help of many friends. In no particular order, I would like to thank my advisor Cinzia Cirillo for pushing me forward, my wife Lynna Nguyen and my parents for supporting me. Throughout my time as a student, Yangwen Liu found all possible bugs in my software and thus made it better. In the last years, Marco Bassani provided me data that allowed the completion of the second half of this dissertation.

## Table of Contents

List of Tables ..... vi
List of Figures ..... viii
1 Introduction ..... 1
2 Discrete-Continuous Probit model ..... 5
2.1 Introduction ..... 5
2.2 Literature review ..... 6
2.2.1 Estimation methods for discrete-continuous Probit ..... 6
2.3 Methodology ..... 8
2.3.1 Choice probability ..... 9
2.3.2 Difference of error terms ..... 10
2.3.3 Error terms reparametrization ..... 11
2.4 Regression ..... 13
2.5 Log-likelihood function ..... 16
2.6 Estimation with numerical computation ..... 17
2.6.1 Genz's algorithm ..... 17
2.6.1.1 Transformations ..... 17
2.6.1.2 The algorithm ..... 22
2.6.2 Acceptance-rejection algorithm ..... 22
2.6.3 Comparison of acceptance-rejection and Genz ..... 23
2.6.3.1 Example ..... 24
3 Ordered and Unordered Discrete-Continuous Probit model with application ..... 36
to vehicle ownership and use
36
3.1 Introduction ..... 36
3.2 Literature review ..... 37
3.3 Ordered discrete-continuous model formulation ..... 40
3.4 Data description ..... 43
3.5 Empirical results ..... 44
3.5.1 Coefficients estimation ..... 45
3.5.2 Covariance matrix estimation ..... 47
3.5.3 Goodness of fit ..... 48
3.5.4 Results from model application ..... 50
3.6 Conclusions ..... 53
4 Validation of Discrete-Continuous Models ..... 56
4.1 Introduction ..... 56
4.2 Simulated data: ordered discrete-continuous (ODC) model ..... 56
4.2.1 ODC Data generation ..... 56
4.2.2 ODC validation results: low correlation ..... 57
4.2.3 ODC validation results: high correlation ..... 64
4.3 Simulated data: unordered discrete-continuous (UDC) model validation ..... 69
4.3.1 UDC data generation ..... 69
4.3.2 UDC validation results: low correlation ..... 70
4.3.3 UDC validation results: high correlation ..... 77
4.4 Real data: discrete-continuous model validation ..... 83
4.4.1 Discrete-continuous car ownership model - NHTS 2009 ..... 84
4.5 Conclusions ..... 98
5 Random Effect Models for Free-Flow speed estimation ..... 99
5.1 Introduction ..... 99
5.2 Literature review ..... 100
5.3 Speed database ..... 102
5.4 Modeling approach ..... 107
5.4.1 Fixed and random effect models ..... 108
5.4.2 Variable selection ..... 109
5.5 Model calibration ..... 110
5.6 Conclusions ..... 114
6 Validation of Random Effects ..... 122
6.1 Introduction ..... 122
6.2 One random effect models ..... 123
6.2.1 Conditional mean ..... 124
6.2.2 Best predictor ..... 126
6.3 Numerical examples ..... 127
6.4 Two random effects models ..... 133
6.4.1 Numerical examples ..... 135
6.5 Computation of the residuals ..... 141
6.6 Results: quantiles calculation ..... 145
6.7 Jackknifed coefficients ..... 149
6.8 Conclusions ..... 154

7 Conclusions 156
7.1 Summary . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 156
7.2 Contributions . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 158
7.3 Future work . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 159

| Bibliography 161 |
| :--- | :--- |

## List of Tables

2.1 Five points to inspect log-likelihood functions ..... 25
2.2 Gradient for $\mathrm{p}_{1}$ ..... 26
2.3 Gradient for $\mathrm{p}_{2}$ ..... 27
2.4 Gradient for $\mathrm{p}_{3}$ ..... 28
2.5 Gradient for $\mathrm{p}_{4}$ ..... 29
2.6 Gradient for $\mathrm{p}_{5}$ ..... 29
2.7 375 samples with sim. and Genz estimation ..... 29
2.8 Standard Errors with Simulation ..... 30
2.9 Standard Errors with Genz ..... 30
3.1 Summary of vehicle ownership, type and usage models ..... 41
3.2 Descriptive Statistics - NHTS 2009 ..... 43
3.3 Estimation Results ..... 50
3.4 Covariance Matrix, Model 1, Unordered Monte Carlo ..... 51
3.5 Covariance Matrix, Model 2, Genz ..... 51
3.6 Covariance Matrix, Model 3, Ordered DC ..... 52
3.7 Covariance Matrix, Model 2, Genz (no logsum) ..... 52
3.8 Sensitivity Scenarios ..... 53
3.9 Application Results ..... 55
4.1 ODC Validation $-\rho=0.1$ ..... 58
4.2 Simulated ODC, $\rho=0.1$ - ODC coefficients for validation sample ..... 62
4.4 Simulated ODC, $\rho=0.1$ - OP coefficients for validation sample ..... 62
4.6 Simulated ODC, $\rho=0.1$ - Regression coefficients for validation sample ..... 63
4.8 ODC Validation - $\rho=0.9$ ..... 65
4.9 Simulated ODC, $\rho=0.9$ - ODC coefficients for validation sample ..... 65
4.11 Simulated ODC, $\rho=0.9$ - OP coefficients for validation sample ..... 65
4.13 Simulated ODC, $\rho=0.9$ - Regression coefficients for validation sample ..... 66
4.15 UDC Validation - low correlations ..... 72
4.16 Simulated UDC, low correlations - UDC coefficients for validation sample ..... 75
4.18 Simulated UDC, low correlation - Probit coefficients for validation sample ..... 76
4.20 Simulated UDC, low correlation - Regression coefficients for valida- tion sample ..... 76
4.22 UDC Validation - high correlations ..... 77
4.23 Simulated UDC, high correlations - UDC coefficients for validation sample ..... 81
4.25 Simulated UDC, high correlation - Probit coefficients for validation ..... 82
4.27 Simulated UDC, high correlation - Regression coefficients for valida- tion sample ..... 82
4.29 2009-ODC ..... 86
4.30 2009 NHTS - ODC coefficients ..... 89
4.32 2009 NHTS - Ordered Probit coefficients ..... 90
4.342009 NHTS - Regression coefficients ..... 90
4.362009 - UDC ..... 91
4.372009 NHTS - UDC coefficients ..... 95
4.38 2009 NHTS - Probit coefficients ..... 96
4.40 2009 NHTS - Regression coefficients ..... 97
5.1 Geometric and operative characteristics of the selected road sections ..... 103
5.2 Summarized raw statistics of considered variables ..... 107
5.3 Model 1 and 2 - coefficients and significant variables ..... 112
5.4 Model 3 - coefficients and significant variables ..... 113
6.1 Predicted quantiles sections $1,3,5$ and 7 ..... 147
6.2 Predicted quantiles sections $8,9,10,11$ ..... 147
6.3 Predicted quantiles sections $12,13,14,15$ ..... 147
6.4 Predicted quantiles sections $16,17,18,21$ ..... 147
6.5 Predicted quantiles sections $22,23,24,25$ ..... 148
6.6 Predicted quantiles sections $26,27,28,29$ ..... 148
6.7 Predicted quantiles sections $30,31,32,33$ ..... 148
6.8 Predicted quantiles sections 34,36 ..... 148
6.9 Jackknife coefficients 1 ..... 151
6.10 Jackknife coefficients 2 ..... 152
6.11 Jackknife coefficients 3 ..... 153

## List of Figures

2.1 Comparison of Genz and simulation for one observation ..... 23
2.2 Comparison of Genz and simulation with Common Random Stream ..... 24
2.3 Log-likelihood at $\mathrm{p}_{1}$ ..... 30
2.4 Log-likelihood at $\mathrm{p}_{2}$ ..... 31
2.5 Log-likelihood at $\mathrm{p}_{3}$ ..... 32
2.6 Log-likelihood at $\mathrm{p}_{4}$ ..... 33
2.7 Log-likelihood at $\mathrm{p}_{5}$ ..... 34
2.8 Comparison of Genz and simulation estimates ..... 35
4.1 Simulated ODC, $\rho=0.1$ - Comp. with Market Shares ..... 59
4.2 Simulated ODC, $\rho=0.1$ - Comp. with OP ..... 60
4.3 Simulated ODC, $\rho=0.1$ - Regression ..... 61
4.4 Simulated ODC, $\rho=0.9$ - Comp. with Market Shares ..... 66
4.5 Simulated ODC, $\rho=0.9$ - Comp. with OP ..... 67
4.6 Simulated ODC, $\rho=0.9$ - Regression ..... 68
4.7 Simulated UDC, low correlations - Comp. with Market Shares ..... 72
4.8 Simulated UDC, low correlations - Comp. with OP ..... 73
4.9 Simulated UDC, low correlations - Regression ..... 74
4.10 Simulated UDC, high correlations - Comp. with Market Shares ..... 78
4.11 Simulated UDC, high correlations - Comp. with OP ..... 79
4.12 Simulated UDC, high correlations - Regression ..... 80
4.13 ODC 2009 - Validation against market shares ..... 86
4.14 ODC 2009 - Validation against ordered Probit ..... 87
4.15 ODC 2009 - Validation of regression ..... 88
4.16 UDC 2009 - Validation against market share ..... 92
4.17 UDC 2009 - Validation against Probit ..... 93
4.18 UDC 2009 - Validation of regression ..... 94
5.1 Comparison of operating speeds detected for the same vehicle from video image analysis and laser speed gun ..... 105
5.2 Fitted and Observed Values for Model 1 ..... 114
5.3 Comparison of Fitted and Observed Values - Model 1 and 3 ..... 115
5.4 Residuals for Model 1, by Road ..... 116
5.5 Residuals for Model 1, by Section ..... 117
5.6 Fitted and Observed Values for Model 2 ..... 118
5.7 Comparison of Fitted and Observed Values - Model 2 and 3 ..... 118
5.8 Residuals for Model 2, by Road ..... 119
5.9 Residuals for Model 2, by Section ..... 119
5.10 Fitted and Observed Values for Model 3 ..... 120
5.11 Residuals for Model 3, by Road ..... 120
5.12 Residuals for Model 3, by Section ..... 121
6.1 Sections 1-12 ..... 129
6.2 Sections 13-22 ..... 130
6.3 Sections 23-31 ..... 131
6.4 Sections 32-36 ..... 132
6.5 Sections 1-12 ..... 137
6.6 Sections 13-22 ..... 138
6.7 Sections 23-31 ..... 139
6.8 Sections 32-36 ..... 140
6.9 Comparison of Section Effects ..... 143
6.10 Comparison of Direction Effects ..... 143

## Chapter 1: Introduction

Transport modeling requires a multidisciplinary approach. In particular, advanced research in this field entails a deep mastery of the theoretical and mathematical bases of the methodologies used in connection with the transportation models, such as optimization methods, mathematical statistics, stochastic processes, dynamic models and so on. All this knowledge is needed to advance the state of the art and to enrich the toolkit available for eventual practical applications [CJM12]. This is especially true for demand modeling based on discrete choice analysis. This branch of the transportation discipline has seen enormous progress in recent years; examples of significant advances include estimation with simulation Tra09; dynamics in choice modeling CXB16; integrated models for discrete and continuous decision variables Bha15; optimization methods for log-likelihood estimation and Bayesian estimation RAM05. It is often a real challenge for students in transportation programs to understand all the techniques that have supported such changes and to be prepared to make significant contributions in transportation science.

In this context, I came to a transportation program with a Bachelor degree in Mathematics. Since then I have developed and implemented in ready to use software a number of statistical methods for different transportation applications
with special emphasis on discrete choice models. Although the models presented were motivated by a practical need, the methods that I'm proposing are general and can be applied in different context and on a variety of data. Actually, I'm more motivated by the properties of the models than by the results produced and their implication for policy analysis. Given the diversity of the problems in hands, in this dissertation I have organized my contributions by chapters.

Chapter 2 presents a general framework for continuous and discrete choice variables. Models of this type are required when multiple decisions of different natures are made simultaneously. Joint estimations have the advantage to be statistically efficient and to allow testing the effects of the covariates on all the model outcomes. The model is based on multinomial Probit and regression, where a full variance covariance matrix captures the correlation among the discrete and the continuous parts. This class of models does not have closed mathematical form for the choice probabilities and the underlying optimization problem is usually solved with simulations. Monte-Carlo (MC) based simulations presents a number of major challenges in this case and therefore in this thesis more sophisticated algorithms for the approximation of integrals that involve multivariate normal distributions are proposed. In this Chapter evidences on the advantages offered by the Genz based method for the estimation of discrete continuous problems are explained and numerical results offered.

In Chapter 3, the methods developed on the previous Chapter are applied to the problem of vehicle ownership, type/vintage and use. The analysis is performed on data extracted from the 2009 National Household Travel Survey [DoT09] and on
an auxiliary dataset derived from the Consumer Report. The discrete-continuous Probit model is estimated both with MC simulations and with the Genz based algorithm. Moreover, a comparison across the unordered model and ordered discrete continuous Probit model is presented. Ordered structure are in general preferred to unordered Probit for the saving in computational costs deriving from the closed mathematical form of the choice probabilities. The results show that discretecontinuous unordered Probit are superior to ordered structures in terms of goodness of fit, but produce comparable results when applied to predict behavioral changes.

Ordered and unordered discrete-continuous models are validated using holdout samples in Chapter 4. Probit based discrete-continuous models have been recently proposed in the transportation literature and have been applied to a number of real case studies. However, it is not clear if the estimation of more complex model formulations produces better forecasts and if the conditioning on continuous variables helps to reproduce the market shares of the discrete alternatives. To this scope experiments on simulated data, for which the true coefficients and the true correlation elements are known to the analyst, have been generated and used to calculate market share on out of samples with both low and high correlation schemes. Results on the car ownership and use problem estimated on both 2001 and 2009 NHTS are presented and discussed.

In Chapter 5, a random effect model is proposed to estimate free-flow speed on two-lane rural highways. The data used for the analysis were collected in the Northwest of Italy using video cameras and a laser speed gun. The model structure adopted separates the estimate of the central tendency of speeds from the typical
deviations of individual speeds. Hence, in the model the same set of variables can be used to determine the mean value and the standard deviation of the speed distribution; the desired speed percentile is then calculated by considering the associated standard normal random variable (Z). Random effects (RE) were included in the model to account for the variability in time and space of the data that contains repeated measurements for the same road/section/direction and to remove the dependency between any estimation errors from individual observations. Fixed effect (FE) models are also calibrated for comparison purposes and the Bayesian information criterion (BIC) is used for variable selection and applied to both the FE and RE models.

The last Chapter of this dissertation is devoted to the transferability of Random Effect models in the context of free-flow speed estimation. This problem is twofold. First, it is necessary to estimate the RE for the road sections where the model is going to be transferred. Second, the speed quantiles used as predictors for the general model are not available in the new road sections under analysis. A method that correlates the RE of the new sections to the RE of the original model is proposed; results show that the method converges when a relatively low number of observations is collected for the out of sample sections. An analysis based on jackknife technique is also proposed to analyze cases where high errors are computed when transferring the model.

## Chapter 2: Discrete-Continuous Probit model

### 2.1 Introduction

In many disciplines it is common to work with mixed data collected from measurements of multiple outcomes. These outcomes are often measured on different scales and their underlying variables can be discrete, ordinal or continuous TPH13. In the transportation field, a number of problems are characterized by several decision variables that are not from the same family. For example, in the problem of car ownership both discrete and continuous dependent variables should be taken into account for model formulation. The number of cars in the household can be modeled as a discrete variable or an ordinal variable; the vehicle type is a discrete variable; while the annual mileage or the mileage traveled with each vehicle in the household are continuous variables LTC14. In trip generation and activity scheduling, the number of trips is an ordinal variable, the type of activity is a discrete variable and the time allocated to each activity is a continuous variable PB13. Models for joint analysis of decision variable of the same type are based on classical multivariate statistics for continuous outcomes and on tree structures (or nested logit models) for sequential decision making over discrete alternatives BBA01. Methods for the analysis of variables of different types exist but their development and application
is new especially in transportation demand modeling. One simple approach consists of the analysis of each outcome separately, ignoring the correlation between the different outcomes. The separate analysis produces loss in the efficiency of the covariates and makes it impossible to test the effect of the covariates on all the outcomes to be modeled TPH13. Recently, models have been proposed to jointly handle mixed types of dependent variables, including multiple nominal variables, multiple ordinal variables, and multiple count variables, as well as multiple continuous variables LTC14 Bha15 BAS ${ }^{+} 14$.

In this Chapter, we propose multivariate econometric models for decision problems involving both discrete and continuous choices. The approach is based on multinomial probit and regression; it accommodates general covariance structures for the utilities of the discrete alternatives and for the linear regression of the continuous outcome. We also propose a Maximum Likelihood Estimation procedure based on the Genz Gen92 algorithm to overcome the difficulties deriving from the optimization of probit based functions.

### 2.2 Literature review

### 2.2.1 Estimation methods for discrete-continuous Probit

Discrete-continuous probit probabilities do not have a closed-form expression and must be approximated numerically. Non-simulation and simulation procedures have been proposed for multinomial probit and more recently for integrated discrete-
continuous probit based models. Both procedures have proved to be effective in certain circumstances Tra09]; however, there is no consensus on a general method that can be applied to all types of problems. Early applications use quadrature methods to approximate the integral by a weighted function of specially chosen evaluation points Gew96. Quadrature are suggested for low dimensional integrals (max. four or five), which limits the application to discrete problems involving a relatively high number of alternatives. Daganzo introduced another non-simulation procedure based on the Clark algorithm DBS77. This algorithm is based on the concept that the maximum of several normally distributed variables is itself approximately normally distributed. Unfortunately, the approximation can be highly inaccurate in some situations, and the degree of accuracy is difficult to assess in any given setting HSD82.

More recently, simulation methods have been widely applied to approximate non closed form choice probabilities. Hajivassiliou et al. HMR96 provides a comprehensive summary of the various simulators that have been proposed for probit models. Three simulators are of particular interest for probits of any form: acceptreject MM81, smoothed acceptreject McF89, and Geweke-Hajivassiliou-Keane (GHK) simulator Gek89 Ker91, HM98]. Among them, the GHK simulator is the one that produced the best results in our experiments. However we have not been able to adapt it to the models presented in this dissertation. Bhat Bha11 argued that the computational cost of maximum simulated log-likelihood (MSL) to ensure good asymptotic MSL estimator properties can be prohibitive and that MSL is practically infeasible as the number of dimensions of integration rises. He
introduced a maximum approximate composite marginal likelihood (MACML) estimation approach and applied it to MNP models using simple optimization software for likelihood estimation.

According to Bhat, the MACML estimation of MNP-based models involves only univariate and bivariate cumulative normal distribution function evaluations, regardless of the number of alternatives or the number of choice occasions per individual or the nature of social/spatial dependence structures. From application on both simulated and real data Bhat and his coauthors derive that substantial computational efficiency relative to the MSL inference approach can be obtained Bha11.

### 2.3 Methodology

In the integrated model, the discrete problem concerns the forecast of the probability of a choice across a finite number of alternatives using a set of predictors. Suppose there are k alternatives, plus a base alternative $\mathrm{U}_{0}$, the utility for each alternative consists of one deterministic part and one unobserved part (error term):

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \mathrm{U}_{0}=\quad \epsilon_{0} \\
& \mathrm{U}_{1}=\mathrm{X}_{1}^{\mathrm{T}} \beta_{1}+\epsilon_{1} \\
& \ldots \\
& \mathrm{U}_{\mathrm{k}}=\mathrm{X}_{\mathrm{k}}^{\mathrm{T}} \beta_{\mathrm{k}}+\epsilon_{\mathrm{k}}
\end{aligned}
$$

where, $\mathrm{U}_{\mathrm{j}}$ is the utility associated to each alternative $\mathrm{j} ; \mathrm{X}_{\mathrm{j}}$ are the explanatory variables associated with the decision maker and the alternative. $\beta_{\mathrm{j}}$ is the corresponding parameter to be estimated. We say that $\mathrm{X}_{\mathrm{j}}^{\mathrm{T}} \beta_{\mathrm{j}}=\mathrm{V}_{\mathrm{j}}$ is the deterministic part of the utility.

It is common in discrete-choice modeling to refer to both $U_{j}$ and $V_{j}$ as the utility. In this document we avoid this confusion and refer to $\mathrm{V}_{\mathrm{j}}$ as the deterministic part of the utility.

Another source of confusion is that some of the $\beta_{\mathrm{j}}$ parameters may share elements together in order to increase modeling flexibility. For example if we want to model two transportation mode, say driving to work or take the bus, and we want to incorporate their price in the utility functions, both predictors could have the same coefficient. This issue is resolved by building a single extended design matrix that generates all utilities for all observations. The details regarding the construction of this design matrix are beyond the scope of this document and can be found at jm.dynddns.us/files/specUtility.pdf.

### 2.3.1 Choice probability

In an unordered structure, the household is assumed to be rational and to choose the alternative that maximizes its utility. In this case, we adopt multinomial probit model for the the discrete decisions and therefore the error terms follow a multivariate normal distribution with full, unrestricted covariance matrix. The choice probability can be expressed as follow:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathrm{P}(\mathrm{Y}=\mathrm{y} \mid \mathrm{X}, \beta, \Sigma)=\int_{\mathrm{R}^{\mathrm{k}+1}} \mathrm{I}\left(\mathrm{~V}_{\mathrm{y}}+\epsilon_{\mathrm{y}}>\mathrm{V}_{\mathrm{j}}+\epsilon_{\mathrm{j}} \quad \forall \mathrm{j} \neq \mathrm{y}\right) \phi(\epsilon) \mathrm{d} \epsilon \tag{2.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

where:

$$
\begin{aligned}
\mathrm{X} & =\left(\mathrm{X}_{1}, \ldots, \mathrm{X}_{\mathrm{k}}\right) \\
\beta & =\left(\beta_{1}, \ldots, \beta_{\mathrm{k}}\right) \\
\epsilon & =\left(\epsilon_{0}, \ldots, \epsilon_{\mathrm{k}}\right) \\
\Sigma & =\text { covariance of } \epsilon, \text { upon which } \phi \text { depends }
\end{aligned}
$$

The indicator function $I(\cdot)$ ensures that the observed choice is indeed the one with the biggest utility. The subscript y indicates the predictors and coefficients of the chosen alternative and the subscript j indicate the other alternatives. The integral correspond to the expectation of the event " $U_{y}$ is the biggest utility", which is the choice probability.

### 2.3.2 Difference of error terms

Since only differences in utility matter, the choice probability can be equivalently expressed as a k-dimensional integral over the differences between the errors. Suppose we calculate the differences with respect to alternative y, the alternative for which we are calculating the probability. Then we define for all indexes $\mathrm{j} \neq \mathrm{y}$ :

$$
\begin{aligned}
\tilde{\epsilon}_{\mathrm{j}-\mathrm{y}} & =\epsilon_{\mathrm{j}}-\epsilon_{\mathrm{y}} \\
\tilde{\epsilon}_{-\mathrm{y}} & =\left(\tilde{\epsilon}_{0 \mathrm{y}}, \ldots, \tilde{\epsilon}_{\mathrm{ky}}\right) \\
\tilde{\mathrm{V}}_{\mathrm{y}-\mathrm{j}} & =\mathrm{V}_{\mathrm{y}}-\mathrm{V}_{\mathrm{j}} \\
\tilde{\mathrm{~V}}_{\mathrm{y}-} & =\left(\tilde{\mathrm{V}}_{\mathrm{y}-0}, \ldots, \tilde{\mathrm{~V}}_{\mathrm{y}-\mathrm{k}}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

The subscript in $q_{a-b}$ should read "a minus b" because to compute the result, we calculate $q_{a}$ minus $q_{b}$. The probit is normalized using the procedure proposed by Train Tra09] to ensure that all parameters are identified. For more details on
the normalization in the context of discrete-continuous models we refer to Liu et al. LTC14.

A consequence of this normalization argument is that the matrix $\Sigma$ is overparametrized for the probit model since, as we shall see, the covariance $\Sigma_{-\mathrm{y}}$ of $\tilde{\epsilon}_{-\mathrm{y}}$ is sufficient to express the choice probability. With a few transformations we obtain:

$$
\begin{align*}
& \mathrm{V}_{\mathrm{y}}+\epsilon_{\mathrm{y}}>\mathrm{V}_{\mathrm{j}}+\epsilon_{\mathrm{j}} \forall \mathrm{j} \neq \mathrm{y} \\
\Leftrightarrow & \mathrm{~V}_{\mathrm{y}}-\mathrm{V}_{\mathrm{j}}>\epsilon_{\mathrm{j}}-\epsilon_{\mathrm{y}} \forall \mathrm{j} \neq \mathrm{y}  \tag{2.2}\\
\Leftrightarrow & \tilde{\mathrm{~V}}_{\mathrm{y}-}>\tilde{\epsilon}_{-\mathrm{y}}
\end{align*}
$$

This allows to express explicitly the choice probability in terms of $\tilde{\mathrm{V}}_{\mathrm{y}^{-}}, \tilde{\epsilon}_{-\mathrm{y}}$ and the multivariate normal cumulative distribution function, as seen in equation 2.3

$$
\begin{align*}
\mathrm{P}\left(\mathrm{Y}=\mathrm{y} \mid \mathrm{X}, \beta, \Sigma_{-y}\right) & =\int_{\mathrm{R}^{\mathrm{k}+1}} \mathrm{I}\left(\mathrm{~V}_{\mathrm{y}}+\epsilon_{\mathrm{y}}>\mathrm{V}_{\mathrm{j}}+\epsilon_{\mathrm{j}} \quad \forall \mathrm{j} \neq \mathrm{y}\right) \phi(\epsilon) \mathrm{d} \epsilon \\
& =\int_{-\infty}^{\tilde{\mathrm{V}}_{\mathrm{y}-0}} \cdots \int_{-\infty}^{\tilde{\mathrm{V}}_{\mathrm{y}-\mathrm{k}}} 1 \cdot \phi\left(\tilde{\epsilon}_{-\mathrm{y}}\right) \mathrm{d} \tilde{\epsilon}_{-\mathrm{y}}  \tag{2.3}\\
& =\Phi\left(\tilde{\mathrm{V}}_{\mathrm{y}-}\right)
\end{align*}
$$

### 2.3.3 Error terms reparametrization

We have seen how to compute $\mathrm{P}(\mathrm{Y}=\mathrm{y})$ using $\tilde{\mathrm{V}}_{\mathrm{y}-}$ and $\Sigma_{-\mathrm{y}}$, however this is not enough to compute the choice probability of another alternative $\mathrm{y}^{\prime}$. The key to compute the choice probability of any alternative $\mathrm{y}^{\prime}$ is to set up a matrix M that transforms $\tilde{\epsilon}_{-\mathrm{y}}$ into $\tilde{\epsilon}_{-\mathrm{y}^{\prime}}$. For illustration purposes we will work in the case where
$\mathrm{k}=0$ and we start with $\Sigma_{-0}$. In this context we can easily compute $\mathrm{P}(\mathrm{Y}=0)$. In order to compute $\mathrm{P}(\mathrm{Y}=1,2,3)$ we define the following matrices:

$$
\begin{align*}
& \mathrm{M}_{0,1}=\left[\begin{array}{lll}
-1 & 0 & 0 \\
-1 & 1 & 0 \\
-1 & 0 & 1
\end{array}\right]  \tag{2.4}\\
& \mathrm{M}_{0,2}=\left[\begin{array}{lll}
0 & -1 & 0 \\
1 & -1 & 0 \\
0 & -1 & 1
\end{array}\right]  \tag{2.5}\\
& \mathrm{M}_{0,3}=\left[\begin{array}{lll}
0 & 0 & -1 \\
1 & 0 & -1 \\
0 & 1 & -1
\end{array}\right] \tag{2.6}
\end{align*}
$$

The purpose of $\mathrm{M}_{\mathrm{y}, \mathrm{y}^{\prime}}$ is that it can change error terms taken with respect to the $y^{\text {th }}$ alternative into error terms taken with respect to the $y^{\prime t h}$ alternative:

$$
\mathrm{M}_{0,1} \tilde{\epsilon}_{-0}=\left[\begin{array}{ccc}
-1 & 0 & 0  \tag{2.7}\\
-1 & 1 & 0 \\
-1 & 0 & 1
\end{array}\right]\left[\begin{array}{l}
\epsilon_{1}-\epsilon_{0} \\
\epsilon_{2}-\epsilon_{0} \\
\epsilon_{3}-\epsilon_{0}
\end{array}\right]=\left[\begin{array}{l}
\epsilon_{0}-\epsilon_{1} \\
\epsilon_{2}-\epsilon_{1} \\
\epsilon_{3}-\epsilon_{1}
\end{array}\right]
$$

And similarly for the other alternative. The matrices $\mathrm{M}_{\mathrm{y}, \mathrm{y}^{\prime}}$ define affine transformation of a random vector. We have that, generally, if a $\sim \mathrm{N}(\mu, \Sigma)$ then:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathrm{b}=\mathrm{Ma}+\mathrm{c} \sim \mathrm{~N}\left(\mathrm{M} \mu+\mathrm{c}, \mathrm{M} \Sigma \mathrm{M}^{\mathrm{T}}\right) \tag{2.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

We use this result directly to compute any choice probability. Recall that all that was required to compute $\mathrm{P}(\mathrm{Y}=\mathrm{y})$ was the covariance matrix $\Sigma_{-\mathrm{y}}$. We apply the affine transformation to compute $\Sigma_{-y^{\prime}}$ for all $\mathrm{y}^{\prime}$ and we can compute all choice probabilities.

In our case the original base for error term differences was 0 , and we assume that $\tilde{\epsilon}_{-0}$ follow a normal with mean zero and covariance $\Sigma_{-0}$. It follows that $\tilde{\epsilon}_{-j}$ has mean zero and covariance $\Sigma_{-j}=M_{0, j} \Sigma_{-0} M_{0, j}^{T}$. This is enough to parametrize the probit model using only $\Sigma_{-0}$ for the variance of the error terms.

However any $\Sigma_{-\mathrm{j}}$ could be used. It may be of modeling interest to use a specific alternative as the basis for error differences, primarily to ease the interpretation, even if the choice of the alternative used for a basis does not affect the model itself. The only challenge will be to construct the transformation matrices. In general we can build a matrix $\mathrm{M}_{\mathrm{i}, \mathrm{j}}$ like this:

- start with a ( $\mathrm{k}-1$ )-dimensional identity matrix
- insert a row vector of 0 after row $\mathrm{i}-\mathrm{I}(\mathrm{i}>\mathrm{j})$
- insert a column vector of -1 after column $\mathrm{j}-\mathrm{I}(\mathrm{j}>\mathrm{i})$

For example for $\mathrm{k}=5, \mathrm{M}_{2,4}$ is built like this:

$$
\left[\begin{array}{llll}
1 & 0 & 0 & 0  \tag{2.9}\\
0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 1 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 1
\end{array}\right] \rightarrow\left[\begin{array}{llll}
1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 1 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 1
\end{array}\right] \rightarrow\left[\begin{array}{lllll}
1 & 0 & 0 & -1 & 0 \\
0 & 1 & 0 & -1 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & -1 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 1 & -1 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & -1 & 1
\end{array}\right]
$$

We easily verify that:

$$
\mathrm{M}_{2,4} \tilde{\epsilon}_{-2}=\left[\begin{array}{ccccc}
1 & 0 & 0 & -1 & 0  \tag{2.10}\\
0 & 1 & 0 & -1 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & -1 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 1 & -1 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & -1 & 1
\end{array}\right]\left[\begin{array}{c}
\epsilon_{0}-\epsilon_{2} \\
\epsilon_{1}-\epsilon_{2} \\
\epsilon_{3}-\epsilon_{2} \\
\epsilon_{4}-\epsilon_{2} \\
\epsilon_{5}-\epsilon_{2}
\end{array}\right]=\left[\begin{array}{l}
\epsilon_{0}-\epsilon_{4} \\
\epsilon_{1}-\epsilon_{4} \\
\epsilon_{2}-\epsilon_{4} \\
\epsilon_{3}-\epsilon_{4} \\
\epsilon_{5}-\epsilon_{4}
\end{array}\right]=\tilde{\epsilon}_{-4}
$$

### 2.4 Regression

Regression is adopted to model the continuous part of the model. In a regression, the dependent variable $\mathrm{Y}_{\text {reg }}$ is assumed to be a linear combination of a vector of predictors $\mathrm{X}_{\text {reg }}$ plus some error term:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathrm{Y}_{\mathrm{r}}=\mathrm{X}_{\mathrm{r}} \beta_{\mathrm{r}}+\epsilon_{\mathrm{r}}, \quad \epsilon_{\mathrm{r}} \sim \mathrm{~N}\left(0, \sigma_{\mathrm{r}}^{2}\right) \tag{2.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

Given $\beta_{\mathrm{r}}, \mathrm{X}_{\mathrm{r}}$ and $\sigma_{\mathrm{r}}^{2}$, the likelihood of observing $\mathrm{Y}_{\mathrm{r}}$ is given, by design, by the normal density function $\phi$ :

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathrm{P}\left(\mathrm{Y}_{\mathrm{r}} \mid \beta_{\mathrm{r}}, \mathrm{X}_{\mathrm{r}}, \sigma_{\mathrm{r}}\right)=\phi\left(\mathrm{Y}_{\mathrm{r}} \mid \mathrm{X}_{\mathrm{r}}^{\mathrm{T}} \beta_{\mathrm{r}}, \sigma_{\mathrm{r}}^{2}\right) \tag{2.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

In order to jointly capture the correlation between the discrete and continuous parts, we allow the error term of the regression to be correlated with the error term differences in the probit. Therefore, the specifications of the observable part of the utilities and of the regression remain the same, but the error terms follow an "incremental" normal distribution:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(\tilde{\epsilon}_{0-\mathrm{y}}, \ldots, \tilde{\epsilon}_{\mathrm{k}-\mathrm{y}}, \epsilon_{\mathrm{r}}\right) \sim \mathrm{N}\left(0, \Sigma_{\mathrm{k}+1}\right) \tag{2.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

At this point we assume that we are always working with differences with respect to alternative $\mathrm{y}=0$. Therefore we will be estimating $\Sigma_{-0}$, and $\Sigma_{\mathrm{k}+1}$ will include it as a submatrix:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(\tilde{\epsilon}_{-0}, \ldots, \tilde{\epsilon}_{\mathrm{k}-0}, \epsilon_{\mathrm{r}}\right) \sim \mathrm{N}\left(0, \Sigma_{\mathrm{k}+1}\right) \tag{2.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

A more intuitive way to partition the error term is given by:

$$
\left[\begin{array}{c}
\tilde{\epsilon}_{-0}  \tag{2.15}\\
\epsilon_{\mathrm{r}}
\end{array}\right] \sim \mathrm{N}\left(\left[\begin{array}{l}
0 \\
0
\end{array}\right],\left[\begin{array}{cc}
\Sigma_{-0} & \Sigma_{-0, \mathrm{r}} \\
\Sigma_{\mathrm{r},-0} & \sigma_{\mathrm{r}}^{2}
\end{array}\right]\right)
$$

This is equivalent to say that $\tilde{\epsilon}_{-y}$ and $\epsilon_{\text {reg }}$ are two normally distributed stan-
dalone entities who are also are jointly normally distributed with covariance $\Sigma_{\mathrm{r},-0}$. The probability of observing Y and $\mathrm{Y}_{\mathrm{r}}$ is the product of the probability of observing $\mathrm{Y}_{\mathrm{r}}\left(\mathrm{P}\left(\mathrm{Y}_{\mathrm{r}}\right)\right)$ and the probability of observing Y given $\mathrm{Y}_{\mathrm{r}}\left(\mathrm{P}\left(\mathrm{Y} \mid \mathrm{Y}_{\mathrm{r}}\right)\right)$. It is important to point out that $\mathrm{P}\left(\mathrm{Y}_{\mathrm{r}}\right)$ is not a probability but a density, however these two concepts are not treated differently when performing statistical inference using maximum-likelihood estimation. Densities refer to the probability of observing a random variable in an Infinitesimal interval. If f is the continuous density of the random variable X then:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathrm{P}\left(\mathrm{x}-\frac{\delta}{2}<\mathrm{X}<\mathrm{x}+\frac{\delta}{2}\right) \approx \delta \mathrm{f}(\mathrm{x}) \tag{2.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

We also remark that is is generally true that:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathrm{P}(\mathrm{~A}, \mathrm{~B})=\mathrm{P}(\mathrm{~A}) \mathrm{P}(\mathrm{~B} \mid \mathrm{A})=\mathrm{P}(\mathrm{~B}) \mathrm{P}(\mathrm{~A} \mid \mathrm{B}) \tag{2.17}
\end{equation*}
$$

The probability $\mathrm{P}\left(\mathrm{Y}_{\mathrm{reg}}\right)$ is simply given by the normal density as previously stated. We are left with the challenge of computing the probability of the conditional probit. We have the following general result for jointly normal vectors:

$$
\left[\begin{array}{c}
\mathrm{A}  \tag{2.18}\\
\mathrm{~B}
\end{array}\right] \sim \mathrm{N}\left(\left[\begin{array}{c}
\mu_{\mathrm{a}} \\
\mu_{\mathrm{b}}
\end{array}\right],\left[\begin{array}{cc}
\Sigma_{\mathrm{aa}} & \Sigma_{\mathrm{ab}} \\
\Sigma_{\mathrm{ba}} & \Sigma_{\mathrm{bb}}
\end{array}\right]\right)
$$

We have that if we observe $\mathrm{B}=\mathrm{b}$, then $\mathrm{A} \mid \mathrm{B}=\mathrm{b}$ is normally distributed with the
following parameters:

$$
\begin{align*}
& \mu_{\mathrm{a} \mid \mathrm{b}}=\mu_{\mathrm{a}}+\Sigma_{\mathrm{ab}} \Sigma_{\mathrm{bb}}^{-1}\left(\mathrm{~b}-\mu_{\mathrm{b}}\right)  \tag{2.19}\\
& \Sigma_{\mathrm{a} \mid \mathrm{b}}=\Sigma_{\mathrm{aa}}-\Sigma_{\mathrm{ab}} \Sigma_{\mathrm{bb}}^{-1} \Sigma_{\mathrm{ba}}
\end{align*}
$$

We apply this directly by substituting the estimated residual from the regression $\epsilon_{\mathrm{r}}$ for b :

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tilde{\epsilon}_{\mathrm{y}} \left\lvert\, \epsilon_{\mathrm{reg}} \sim \mathrm{~N}\left(\frac{\Sigma_{\mathrm{y}, \mathrm{reg}}}{\sigma_{\mathrm{reg}}{ }^{2}} \epsilon_{\mathrm{reg}}, \Sigma_{\mathrm{y}}-\Sigma_{\mathrm{y}, \mathrm{reg}} \sigma_{\mathrm{reg}}^{-2} \Sigma_{\mathrm{reg}, \mathrm{y}}\right)\right. \tag{2.20}
\end{equation*}
$$

### 2.5 Log-likelihood function

We can write the log-likelihood function of the discrete-continuous model as:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{LL}\left(\beta, \beta_{\mathrm{r}}, \Sigma_{\mathrm{k}+1} \mid \mathrm{Y}, \mathrm{Y}_{\mathrm{r}}, \mathrm{X}, \mathrm{X}_{\mathrm{r}}\right)=\sum_{\mathrm{i}} \log \left(\phi\left(\mathrm{Y}_{\mathrm{r}, \mathrm{i}} \mid \mathrm{X}_{\mathrm{r}, \mathrm{i}}^{\mathrm{T}} \beta_{\mathrm{r}}, \sigma_{\mathrm{r}}^{2}\right) \Phi\left(\tilde{\mathrm{V}}_{\mathrm{y}_{\mathrm{i}}-, \mathrm{i}} \mid \Sigma_{-\mathrm{y}_{\mathrm{i}}}\right)\right. \tag{2.21}
\end{equation*}
$$

where:

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
\mathrm{Y}_{\mathrm{r}, \mathrm{i}} & : \mathrm{Y}_{\mathrm{r}} \text { for the } i^{\text {th }} \text { observation } \\
\mathrm{X}_{\mathrm{r}, \mathrm{i}} & : X_{\mathrm{r}} \\
\tilde{\mathrm{~V}}_{\mathrm{y}_{\mathrm{i}}-, \mathrm{i}} & : \tilde{\mathrm{V}}_{\mathrm{y}-} \text { for the } i^{\text {th }} \text { observation (depends on the choice } \mathrm{y}_{\mathrm{i}} \text { ) } \\
\Sigma_{-y_{\mathrm{i}}}: \Sigma_{-\mathrm{y}} \text { for the } i^{\text {th }} \text { observation (depends on the choice } \mathrm{y}_{\mathrm{i}} \text { ) }
\end{array}
$$

The estimation of $\Phi$ is discussed in section 2.6. At this point we have achieved to reduce the problem to the computation of the multivariate normal CDF function.

### 2.6 Estimation with numerical computation

In this Section we introduce numerical methods for the computation of the multivariate normal CDF. In particular, we adopt the transformation proposed by Genz (Gen92], which simplifies the problem and transforms |TPH13] into a mathematical form that allows efficient calculation using standard numerical multiple integration algorithms. The use of numerical computation is expected to be faster than Monte Carlo simulation, to produce more precise estimation of the log-likelihood function and a more stable estimation of the Hessian, which is needed to calculate the information matrix.

### 2.6.1 Genz's algorithm

### 2.6.1.1 Transformations

Genz suggests an algorithm for the calculation of multivariate normal probabilities:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathrm{X} \sim \mathrm{~N}(0, \Sigma) \tag{2.22}
\end{equation*}
$$

The algorithm estimates $\mathrm{P}(\mathrm{a}<\mathrm{X}<\mathrm{b})$, which can be used to compute the cumulative distribution if we set $\mathrm{a}=0$. We start with the definition of $\mathrm{P}(\mathrm{a}<\mathrm{X}<\mathrm{b})$ :

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathrm{F}(\mathrm{a}, \mathrm{~b})=\mathrm{P}(\mathrm{a}<\mathrm{N}<\mathrm{b})=\int_{\mathrm{a}_{1}}^{\mathrm{b}_{1}} \ldots \int_{\mathrm{a}_{\mathrm{k}}}^{\mathrm{b}_{\mathrm{k}}} \frac{1}{\sqrt{|\Sigma|(2 \pi)^{\mathrm{k}}}} e^{\frac{-1}{2} \theta^{\mathrm{T}} \Sigma^{-1} \theta} \mathrm{~d} \theta \tag{2.23}
\end{equation*}
$$

The first transformation that we apply is $\mathrm{Cy}=\theta$, where C is the Cholesky
factor of $\Sigma$ such that $\mathrm{CC}^{\mathrm{T}}=\Sigma$. To perform the substitution we need the Jacobian matrix $J$ of the transformation. The $(i, j)$ element of $J$ is given by derivative the $i^{\text {th }}$ element of Cy with respect to $y_{j}$ :

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathrm{J}_{\mathrm{i}, \mathrm{j}}=\frac{\partial(\mathrm{Cy})_{\mathrm{i}}}{\partial \mathrm{y}_{\mathrm{j}}}=\frac{\partial\left(\mathrm{C}_{\mathrm{i}, 1} \mathrm{y}_{1}+\mathrm{C}_{\mathrm{i}, 2} \mathrm{y}_{2}+\cdots+\mathrm{C}_{\mathrm{i}, \mathrm{k}} \mathrm{y}_{\mathrm{k}}\right)}{\partial \mathrm{y}_{\mathrm{j}}}=\mathrm{C}_{\mathrm{i}, \mathrm{j}} \tag{2.24}
\end{equation*}
$$

This gives us $\mathrm{J}=\mathrm{C}$. We also observe that:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sqrt{|\Sigma|}=\sqrt{\left|\mathrm{CC}^{\mathrm{T}}\right|}=\sqrt{|\mathrm{C}|\left|\mathrm{C}^{\mathrm{T}}\right|}=\sqrt{|\mathrm{C}|^{2}}=|\mathrm{C}| \tag{2.25}
\end{equation*}
$$

since the determinant of a diagonal matrix is the product of its elements and both C and $\mathrm{C}^{\mathrm{T}}$ are diagonal matrices with the same diagonal elements. We also observe that the transformation allows us to factorize the integrand:

$$
\begin{align*}
\theta^{\mathrm{T}} \Sigma^{-1} \theta=(\mathrm{Cy})^{\mathrm{T}}\left(\mathrm{CC}^{\mathrm{T}}\right)^{-1}(\mathrm{Cy}) & =\left(\mathrm{y}^{\mathrm{T}} \mathrm{C}^{\mathrm{T}}\right)\left(\mathrm{C}^{-\mathrm{T}} \mathrm{C}^{-1}\right)(\mathrm{Cy})  \tag{2.26}\\
& =\mathrm{y}^{\mathrm{T}}\left(\mathrm{C}^{\mathrm{T}} \mathrm{C}^{-\mathrm{T}}\right)\left(\mathrm{C}^{-1} \mathrm{C}\right) \mathrm{y}=\mathrm{y}^{\mathrm{T}} \mathrm{y}
\end{align*}
$$

such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathrm{e}^{\frac{-1}{2} \theta^{\mathrm{T}} \Sigma^{-1} \theta}=\mathrm{e}^{\frac{-1}{2} \mathrm{y}^{\mathrm{T}} \mathrm{y}}=\mathrm{e}^{-\frac{1}{2} \mathrm{y}_{1}^{2}} \mathrm{e}^{-\frac{1}{2} \mathrm{y}_{2}^{2}} \ldots \mathrm{e}^{-\frac{1}{2} \mathrm{y}_{\mathrm{k}}^{2}} \tag{2.27}
\end{equation*}
$$

The integration bounds are also transformed but become more complicated. We originally had $\mathrm{a}<\theta<\mathrm{b}$. For the $\mathrm{i}^{\text {th }}$ bound we have:

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \mathrm{a}_{\mathrm{i}}<\theta_{\mathrm{i}}=(C y)_{\mathrm{i}}<\mathrm{b}_{\mathrm{i}} \\
& \mathrm{a}_{\mathrm{i}}<\sum_{\mathrm{j}=1}^{\mathrm{k}} \mathrm{C}_{\mathrm{ij}} \mathrm{y}_{\mathrm{j}}<\mathrm{b}_{\mathrm{i}} \\
& \mathrm{a}_{\mathrm{i}}<\sum_{\mathrm{j}=1}^{\mathrm{i}-1} \mathrm{C}_{\mathrm{ij}} \mathrm{y}_{\mathrm{j}}+\mathrm{C}_{\mathrm{ii}} \mathrm{y}_{\mathrm{i}}<\mathrm{b}_{\mathrm{i}} \\
& \left(\mathrm{a}_{\mathrm{i}}-\sum_{\mathrm{j}=1}^{\mathrm{i}-1} \mathrm{C}_{\mathrm{ij}} \mathrm{y}_{\mathrm{j}}\right) / \mathrm{C}_{\mathrm{ii}}=\mathrm{a}_{\mathrm{i}}^{\prime}<\mathrm{y}_{\mathrm{i}}<\left(\mathrm{b}_{\mathrm{i}}-\sum_{\mathrm{j}=1}^{\mathrm{i}-1} \mathrm{C}_{\mathrm{ij}} \mathrm{y}_{\mathrm{j}}\right) / \mathrm{C}_{\mathrm{ii}}=\mathrm{b}_{\mathrm{i}}^{\prime} \\
& \mathrm{a}_{\mathrm{i}}^{\prime}<\mathrm{y}_{\mathrm{i}}<\mathrm{b}_{\mathrm{i}}^{\prime}
\end{aligned}
$$

We can change the indexes of the summation because the elements above the diagonal in C are 0 . Also the bound in the $\mathrm{i}^{\text {th }}$ integral depends on $\mathrm{y}_{1}, \ldots, \mathrm{y}_{\mathrm{i}-1}$ even if the notation does not show it explicitly. After the first variable substitution the integral becomes:

$$
\begin{align*}
\mathrm{F}(\mathrm{a}, \mathrm{~b}) & =\int_{\mathrm{a}_{1}^{\prime}}^{\mathrm{b}_{1}^{\prime}} \cdots \int_{\mathrm{a}_{\mathrm{k}}^{\prime}}^{\mathrm{b}_{\mathrm{k}}^{\prime}} \frac{1}{|\mathrm{C}| \sqrt{(2 \pi)^{\mathrm{k}}}} \mathrm{e}^{-\frac{1}{2} \mathrm{y}^{\mathrm{T}} \mathrm{y}}|\mathrm{C}| \mathrm{dy} \\
& =\frac{1}{\sqrt{(2 \pi)^{\mathrm{k}}}} \int_{\mathrm{a}_{1}^{\prime}}^{\mathrm{b}_{1}^{\prime}} \mathrm{e}^{-\frac{1}{2} \mathrm{y}_{1}^{2}} \int_{\mathrm{a}_{2}^{\prime}}^{\mathrm{b}_{2}^{\prime}} \mathrm{e}^{-\frac{1}{2} \mathrm{y}_{2}^{2}} \cdots \int_{\mathrm{a}_{\mathrm{k}}^{\prime}}^{\mathrm{b}_{\mathrm{k}}^{\prime}} \mathrm{e}^{-\frac{1}{2} \mathrm{y}_{\mathrm{k}}^{2}} d y  \tag{2.28}\\
& =\int_{\mathrm{a}_{1}^{\prime}}^{\mathrm{b}_{1}^{\prime}} \phi\left(\mathrm{y}_{1}\right) \int_{\mathrm{a}_{2}^{\prime}}^{\mathrm{b}_{2}^{\prime}} \phi\left(\mathrm{y}_{2}\right) \ldots \int_{\mathrm{a}_{\mathrm{k}}^{\prime}}^{\mathrm{b}_{\mathrm{k}}^{\prime}} \phi\left(\mathrm{y}_{\mathrm{k}}\right) \mathrm{dy}
\end{align*}
$$

where $\phi$ is the standard normal density function.
The second transformation requires the following result about the derivative of a function inverse. If f an invertible function with inverse $\mathrm{f}^{-1}$, and that the derivative of f in the neighborhood of x is non-zero, then $\mathrm{f}^{-1}$ is guaranteed to be differentiable in the neighborhood of x and its derivative is given by:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(\mathrm{f}^{-1}\right)^{\prime}(\mathrm{x})=\frac{1}{\mathrm{f}^{\prime}\left(\mathrm{f}^{-1}(\mathrm{a})\right)} \tag{2.29}
\end{equation*}
$$

We use this observation to suggest the following independent substitutions:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathrm{y}_{\mathrm{i}}=\Phi^{-1}\left(\mathrm{z}_{\mathrm{i}}\right) \tag{2.30}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then the derivative of the variable change is:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(\Phi^{-1}\right)^{\prime}\left(\mathrm{z}_{\mathrm{i}}\right)=\frac{1}{\phi\left(\Phi^{-1}\left(\mathrm{z}_{\mathrm{i}}\right)\right)} \tag{2.31}
\end{equation*}
$$

We can say that the determinant of the Jacobian of the substitution is given by the product of these derivatives since the substitution is performed independently:

$$
\begin{equation*}
|J|=\prod_{\mathrm{i}=1}^{\mathrm{k}} \frac{1}{\phi\left(\Phi^{-1}\left(\mathrm{z}_{\mathrm{i}}\right)\right)} \tag{2.32}
\end{equation*}
$$

We obtain the following integral to solve:

$$
\begin{align*}
\mathrm{F}(\mathrm{a}, \mathrm{~b}) & =\int_{\mathrm{a}_{1}^{\prime \prime}}^{\mathrm{b}_{1}^{\prime \prime}} \phi\left(\Phi^{-1}\left(\mathrm{z}_{1}\right)\right) \int_{\mathrm{a}_{2}^{\prime \prime}}^{\mathrm{b}_{2}^{\prime \prime}} \phi\left(\Phi^{-1}\left(\mathrm{z}_{2}\right)\right) \ldots \int_{\mathrm{a}_{\mathrm{k}}^{\prime \prime}}^{\mathrm{b}_{\mathrm{k}}^{\prime \prime}} \phi\left(\Phi^{-1}\left(\mathrm{z}_{\mathrm{k}}\right)\right) \prod_{\mathrm{i}=1}^{\mathrm{k}} \frac{1}{\phi\left(\Phi^{-1}\left(\mathrm{z}_{\mathrm{i}}\right)\right)} d \mathrm{z} \\
& =\int_{\mathrm{a}_{1}^{\prime \prime}}^{\mathrm{b}_{1}^{\prime \prime}} \phi\left(\Phi^{-1}\left(\mathrm{z}_{1}\right)\right) \frac{1}{\phi\left(\Phi^{-1}\left(\mathrm{z}_{1}\right)\right)} \ldots \int_{\mathrm{a}_{\mathrm{k}}^{\prime \prime}}^{\mathrm{b}_{\mathrm{k}}^{\prime \prime}} \phi\left(\Phi^{-1}\left(\mathrm{z}_{\mathrm{k}}\right)\right) \frac{1}{\phi\left(\Phi^{-1}\left(\mathrm{z}_{\mathrm{k}}\right)\right)} \mathrm{dz} \\
& =\int_{\mathrm{a}_{1}^{\prime \prime}}^{\mathrm{b}_{1}^{\prime \prime}} \cdots \int_{\mathrm{a}_{\mathrm{k}}^{\prime \prime}}^{\mathrm{b}_{\mathrm{k}}^{\prime \prime}} \mathrm{dz} \tag{2.33}
\end{align*}
$$

with:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathrm{a}_{\mathrm{i}}^{\prime \prime}=\Phi\left(\left(\mathrm{a}_{\mathrm{i}}-\sum_{\mathrm{j}=1}^{\mathrm{i}-1} \mathrm{C}_{\mathrm{ij}} \Phi^{-1}\left(\mathrm{z}_{\mathrm{j}}\right)\right) / \mathrm{C}_{\mathrm{ii}}\right) \tag{2.34}
\end{equation*}
$$

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathrm{b}_{\mathrm{i}}^{\prime \prime}=\Phi\left(\left(\mathrm{b}_{\mathrm{i}}-\sum_{\mathrm{j}=1}^{\mathrm{i}-1} \mathrm{C}_{\mathrm{ij}} \Phi^{-1}\left(\mathrm{z}_{\mathrm{j}}\right)\right) / \mathrm{C}_{\mathrm{ii}}\right) \tag{2.35}
\end{equation*}
$$

The third transformation turns the integral into a so-called constant limit form. The transformation in essentially a linear map between the bounds of the integration space into the the $[0,1]^{\mathrm{k}}$ hypercube:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathrm{z}_{\mathrm{i}}=\mathrm{a}_{\mathrm{i}}^{\prime \prime}+\mathrm{w}_{\mathrm{i}}\left(\mathrm{~b}_{\mathrm{i}}^{\prime \prime}-\mathrm{a}_{\mathrm{i}}^{\prime \prime}\right) \tag{2.36}
\end{equation*}
$$

The derivative of the substitution is given by:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial\left(\mathrm{a}_{\mathrm{i}}^{\prime \prime}+\mathrm{w}_{\mathrm{i}}\left(\mathrm{~b}_{\mathrm{i}}^{\prime \prime}-\mathrm{a}_{\mathrm{i}}^{\prime \prime}\right)\right)}{\partial \mathrm{w}_{\mathrm{i}}}=\mathrm{b}_{\mathrm{i}}^{\prime \prime}-\mathrm{a}_{\mathrm{i}}^{\prime \prime} \tag{2.37}
\end{equation*}
$$

Therefore, the final substitution is given by:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathrm{F}(\mathrm{a}, \mathrm{~b})=\left(\mathrm{b}_{1}^{\prime \prime \prime}-\mathrm{a}_{1}^{\prime \prime \prime}\right) \int_{0}^{1}\left(\mathrm{~b}_{2}^{\prime \prime \prime}-\mathrm{a}_{2}^{\prime \prime \prime}\right) \ldots \int_{0}^{1}\left(\mathrm{~b}_{\mathrm{k}}^{\prime \prime \prime}-\mathrm{a}_{\mathrm{k}}^{\prime \prime \prime}\right) \int_{0}^{1} \mathrm{dw} \tag{2.38}
\end{equation*}
$$

At this point we rename $a_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}$ into $d_{i}$ and $b_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}$ into $e_{i}$, and these quantities are given by:

$$
\begin{align*}
& \mathrm{d}_{\mathrm{i}}=\Phi\left(\left(\mathrm{a}_{\mathrm{i}}-\sum_{\mathrm{j}=1}^{\mathrm{i}-1} \mathrm{C}_{\mathrm{ij}} \Phi^{-1}\left(\mathrm{~d}_{\mathrm{j}}+\mathrm{w}_{\mathrm{j}}\left(\mathrm{e}_{\mathrm{j}}-\mathrm{d}_{\mathrm{j}}\right)\right) / \mathrm{C}_{\mathrm{ii}}\right)\right.  \tag{2.39}\\
& \mathrm{e}_{\mathrm{i}}=\Phi\left(\left(\mathrm{b}_{\mathrm{i}}-\sum_{\mathrm{j}=1}^{\mathrm{i}-1} \mathrm{C}_{\mathrm{ij}} \Phi^{-1}\left(\mathrm{~d}_{\mathrm{j}}+\mathrm{w}_{\mathrm{j}}\left(\mathrm{e}_{\mathrm{j}}-\mathrm{d}_{\mathrm{j}}\right)\right) / \mathrm{C}_{\mathrm{ii}}\right)\right. \tag{2.40}
\end{align*}
$$

The integral we will apply our algorithm to is:

$$
\begin{equation*}
F(a, b)=\left(e_{1}-d_{1}\right) \int_{0}^{1}\left(e_{2}-d_{2}\right) \ldots \int_{0}^{1}\left(e_{k}-d_{k}\right) \int_{0}^{1} d w \tag{2.41}
\end{equation*}
$$

### 2.6.1.2 The algorithm

We estimate $\mathrm{F}(\mathrm{a}, \mathrm{b})$ using Genz's algorithm Gen92:

```
Data: \(\Sigma, \mathrm{a}, \mathrm{b}, \epsilon, \alpha\) and \(\mathrm{N}_{\text {max }}\)
Result: \(\hat{\mathrm{P}}(\mathrm{a}<\mathrm{N}(0, \Sigma)<\mathrm{b})\)
set \(\mathrm{N} \leftarrow 0\);
set Intsum \(\leftarrow 0\);
set Varsum \(\leftarrow 0\);
compute C the Cholesky factor of \(\Sigma\);
do
    generate \(\mathrm{w}_{1}, \ldots, \mathrm{w}_{\mathrm{k}-1}\) from a uniform distribution;
    \(\mathrm{d}_{\mathrm{i}} \leftarrow \Phi\left(\left(\mathrm{a}_{\mathrm{i}}-\sum_{\mathrm{j}=1}^{\mathrm{i}-1} \mathrm{C}_{\mathrm{ij}} \Phi^{-1}\left(\mathrm{~d}_{\mathrm{j}}+\mathrm{w}_{\mathrm{j}}\left(\mathrm{e}_{\mathrm{j}}-\mathrm{d}_{\mathrm{j}}\right)\right) / \mathrm{C}_{\mathrm{ii}}\right) \quad \mathrm{i}=1, \ldots, \mathrm{n} ;\right.\)
    \(\mathrm{e}_{\mathrm{i}} \leftarrow \Phi\left(\left(\mathrm{b}_{\mathrm{i}}-\sum_{\mathrm{j}=1}^{\mathrm{i}-1} \mathrm{C}_{\mathrm{ij}} \Phi^{-1}\left(\mathrm{~d}_{\mathrm{j}}+\mathrm{w}_{\mathrm{j}}\left(\mathrm{e}_{\mathrm{j}}-\mathrm{d}_{\mathrm{j}}\right)\right) / \mathrm{C}_{\mathrm{ii}}\right) \quad \mathrm{i}=1, \ldots, \mathrm{n} ;\right.\)
    \(\mathrm{f}_{\mathrm{i}} \leftarrow\left(\mathrm{e}_{\mathrm{i}}-\mathrm{d}_{\mathrm{i}}\right) \mathrm{f}_{\mathrm{i}-1} \quad \mathrm{i}=1, \ldots, \mathrm{n} ;\)
    \(\mathrm{N} \leftarrow \mathrm{N}+1 ;\)
    \(\delta \leftarrow\left(\mathrm{f}_{\mathrm{k}}-\right.\) Intsum \() / \mathrm{N} ;\)
    Intsum \(\leftarrow\) Intsum \(+\delta\);
    Varsum \(\leftarrow \frac{\mathrm{N}-2}{\mathrm{~N}}\) Varsum \(+\delta^{2}\);
    Error \(\leftarrow \alpha \sqrt{\text { Varsum }}\);
while Error \(<\epsilon\) or \(\mathrm{N}=\mathrm{N}_{\text {max }}\);
```

Algorithm 1: Genz's algorithm

### 2.6.2 Acceptance-rejection algorithm

The competing alternative is to use the traditional acceptance-rejection algorithm to compute normal probabilities. We take draws from the normal distribution and estimate the normal probability by the mean of draws that are below the upper
bound of the integral:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{\mathrm{P}}(\mathrm{~N}(0, \Sigma)<\mathrm{x})=\sum_{\mathrm{b}=1}^{\mathrm{B}} \mathrm{I}\left(\mathrm{w}_{\mathrm{i}}<\mathrm{x}\right) \tag{2.42}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\mathrm{w}_{\mathrm{i}}$ is a draw from the $\mathrm{N}(0, \Sigma)$ distribution.

### 2.6.3 Comparison of acceptance-rejection and Genz

Figure 2.1: Comparison of Genz and simulation for one observation


Figure 2.1 shows the difference between Genz and simulation estimation for a single probability. We can see that both methods are centered around the same value and that Genz has much less volatility. These values have been computed with the same number of random draws, but the draws are different for each point on the figure.

Figure 2.2 is the same as figure 2.1, but with the same random stream for all points. Genz's estimation is smooth but simulation estimation is choppy. The

Figure 2.2: Comparison of Genz and simulation with Common Random Stream

distance between the two curves is due to simulation bias. Indeed, using one common stream reduces the noise in the estimation but also sets its vertical location on the figure.

### 2.6.3.1 Example

We generate the following sample to illustrate the differences between the two methods.

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \mathrm{U}_{1}=\mathrm{X}_{1} \beta_{1}+\mathrm{X}_{4} \beta_{4}+\epsilon_{1} \\
& \mathrm{U}_{2}=\mathrm{X}_{2} \beta_{1}+\mathrm{X}_{5} \beta_{5}+\epsilon_{2} \\
& \mathrm{U}_{3}=\mathrm{X}_{3} \beta_{1}+\mathrm{X}_{6} \beta_{6}+\epsilon_{3}
\end{aligned}
$$

where:

- $\left(\beta_{1}, \beta_{4}, \beta_{5}, \beta_{6}\right)=(-1,1,1,1)$
- $\operatorname{chol}\left(\operatorname{cov}\left(\epsilon_{2}-\epsilon_{1}, \epsilon_{3}-\epsilon_{1}\right)\right)=\left(\begin{array}{cc}1 & 0 \\ 0.5 & 0.866\end{array}\right)$
- the predictors $\mathrm{X}_{\mathrm{i}}$ are generated with a standard normal
- we have $\mathrm{n}_{\mathrm{obs}}=500$ observations
- for simulations, we use $\mathrm{B}=500$ simulations

To analyze the smoothness of the methods, we take five points where we are inspecting the log-likelihood functions. We take the maximum as found by Genz's algorithm, the real value of the parameters, zero for the coefficients and identity for the covariance matrix, and two "random" points. The value of the points can be seen in table 2.1.

Table 2.1: Five points to inspect log-likelihood functions

| parameter | $\max \left(\mathrm{p}_{1}\right)$ | real $\left(\mathrm{p}_{2}\right)$ | zero $\left(\mathrm{p}_{3}\right)$ | random $1\left(\mathrm{p}_{4}\right)$ | random $2\left(\mathrm{p}_{5}\right)$ |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $\beta_{1}$ | -0.994 | -1.000 | 0 | 0.5 | -2 |
| $\beta_{4}$ | 1.065 | 1.000 | 0 | 0.5 | -2 |
| $\beta_{5}$ | 0.924 | 1.000 | 0 | -2.0 | -2 |
| $\beta_{6}$ | 0.872 | 1.000 | 0 | -2.0 | 2 |
| $\mathrm{~L}_{2,1}$ | 0.357 | 0.500 | 0 | 1.0 | 2 |
| $\mathrm{~L}_{2,2}$ | 0.691 | 0.866 | 1 | 1.0 | 2 |

The computation of gradients is essential to the numerical estimation of parameter estimates. To estimate them, we take these five points and compute the centered differences derivatives for values of $\delta$ between 0.1 and 0.001 , for both method. The results can be seen in table $2.2|2.3| 2.4 \mid 2.5$ and 2.6 . The are several things to notice.

First, Genz's method is relatively robust to a large value of $\delta$ for all five points. This looks promising because we would like to use such a large value with simulation and hope to get meaningful derivatives.

Second, simulation produces very unreliable gradients in the vicinity of the maximum likelihood, as seen in tables 2.2 and 2.3 . This is troublesome because it
is the area where good precision would be most useful, in particular to estimate standard deviations.

Third, gradients are surprisingly stable at point $\mathrm{p}_{3}, \mathrm{p}_{4}$ and to some extent $\mathrm{p}_{5}$ as seen in tables 2.4, 2.5 and 2.6. We believe that this is what explains why the solvers typically find estimates close to the max, but that lack accuracy: they have good enough derivatives to reach the vicinity of the maximum and stall as soon as they reach there. The exact behavior is sample dependent.

Table 2.2: Gradient for $\mathrm{p}_{1}$

| parameter | method | 0.1 | 0.05 | 0.01 | 0.005 | 0.001 |
| :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- |
|  |  | -3.595 | -3.216 | -14.097 | -19.542 | -4.94 |
| $\mathrm{~B}_{4}$ | sim | -6.342 | -9.648 | -17.259 | -4.482 | 19.41 |
| $\mathrm{~B}_{5}$ | sim | -3.123 | -4.764 | -7.439 | -11.612 | -27.403 |
| $\mathrm{~B}_{6}$ | sim | -2.133 | 2.799 | 3.235 | -8.325 | 32.072 |
| $\mathrm{~L}_{2,1}$ | sim | 0.414 | 3.824 | 10.725 | 11.889 | -23.02 |
| $\mathrm{~L}_{2,2}$ | sim | 4.846 | 11.601 | 29.215 | -5.219 | -32.202 |
| $\mathrm{~B}_{1}$ | Genz | 1.275 | 1.617 | 1.727 | 1.73 | 1.731 |
| $\mathrm{~B}_{4}$ | Genz | -0.546 | -0.653 | -0.687 | -0.688 | -0.688 |
| $\mathrm{~B}_{5}$ | Genz | -0.615 | -0.682 | -0.703 | -0.703 | -0.704 |
| $\mathrm{~B}_{6}$ | Genz | 0.624 | 0.539 | 0.512 | 0.511 | 0.511 |
| $\mathrm{~L}_{2,1}$ | Genz | -1.903 | -1.842 | -1.823 | -1.822 | -1.822 |
| $\mathrm{~L}_{2,2}$ | Genz | 1.087 | 0.339 | 0.103 | 0.096 | 0.093 |

It is convenient to look at the shape of the log-likelihood with respect to each parameter.

Figures 2.3 and 2.4 illustrates why it is difficult to optimize the simulated loglikelihood functions at the max. The subplot for $\mathrm{L}_{22}$ is the most striking as it looks like a step function.

Figure 2.5 shows why it is not too difficult for the solver to iterate around zero since the function is mostly smooth and close to the better approximation produced

Table 2.3: Gradient for $\mathrm{p}_{2}$

| parameter | method | 0.1 | 0.05 | 0.01 | 0.005 | 0.001 |
| :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- |
|  | sim | -14.801 | -12.118 | -8.175 | -15.88 | 16.878 |
| $\mathrm{~B}_{4}$ | sim | 19.051 | 21.538 | 29.854 | 27.422 | 18.472 |
| $\mathrm{~B}_{5}$ | sim | -8.753 | -8.941 | -12.339 | -15.623 | -19.969 |
| $\mathrm{~B}_{6}$ | sim | -11.592 | -12.07 | -9.55 | -4.245 | -8.963 |
| $\mathrm{~L}_{2,1}$ | sim | -13.517 | -17.82 | -8.545 | -6.31 | -3.909 |
| $\mathrm{~L}_{2,2}$ | sim | -17.746 | -19.455 | -22.365 | -20.646 | -18.965 |
| $\mathrm{~B}_{1}$ | Genz | -14.202 | -13.883 | -13.781 | -13.778 | -13.777 |
| $\mathrm{~B}_{4}$ | Genz | 17.86 | 17.765 | 17.735 | 17.734 | 17.733 |
| $\mathrm{~B}_{5}$ | Genz | -7.557 | -7.615 | -7.633 | -7.634 | -7.634 |
| $\mathrm{~B}_{6}$ | Genz | -13.956 | -14.014 | -14.033 | -14.033 | -14.034 |
| $\mathrm{~L}_{2,1}$ | Genz | -11.9 | -11.923 | -11.93 | -11.93 | -11.93 |
| $\mathrm{~L}_{2,2}$ | Genz | -12.697 | -13.12 | -13.254 | -13.259 | -13.26 |

by Genz.
Figures 2.6 and 2.7 show mostly discrepancies between the two estimates when we are far from optimal values. These differences are caused by very small default probability values used when the acceptance-rejection algorithm produces zero acceptances.

We generate 375 samples and estimate the coefficients with both methods. It is difficult to assess convergence for each and every sample but it is useful to look at the distribution of the estimates. Table 2.7 shows the mean and standard deviation of all six parameter estimates, for both methods. Genz outperforms simulation in both bias and variance.

Figure 2.8 plots the simulation estimates against the Genz estimates for all six parameters. The horizontal and vertical lines correspond to the true parameters, such that we expect the scatter plots to be distributed equally on both sides of the lines. This is absolutely not the case for the simulation estimates, as they are

Table 2.4: Gradient for $\mathrm{p}_{3}$

| parameter | method | 0.1 | 0.05 | 0.01 | 0.005 | 0.001 |
| :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- |
|  |  | -482.603 | -478.965 | -484.43 | -497.348 | -508.8 |
| $\mathrm{~B}_{4}$ | sim | 235.703 | 237.392 | 240.335 | 230.301 | 223.882 |
| $\mathrm{~B}_{5}$ | sim | 116.676 | 122.454 | 130.476 | 123.521 | 152.201 |
| $\mathrm{~B}_{6}$ | sim | 124.229 | 124.229 | 129.231 | 145.062 | 153.882 |
| $\mathrm{~L}_{2,1}$ | sim | 41.057 | 42.894 | 33.322 | 40.799 | 26.654 |
| $\mathrm{~L}_{2,2}$ | sim | -0.203 | 0.331 | -0.407 | 3.69 | -2.594 |
| $\mathrm{~B}_{1}$ | Genz | -477.343 | -476.17 | -475.794 | -475.782 | -475.779 |
| $\mathrm{~B}_{4}$ | Genz | 232.18 | 231.907 | 231.82 | 231.817 | 231.816 |
| $\mathrm{~B}_{5}$ | Genz | 117.246 | 117.13 | 117.093 | 117.092 | 117.091 |
| $\mathrm{~B}_{6}$ | Genz | 118.392 | 118.288 | 118.254 | 118.253 | 118.253 |
| $\mathrm{~L}_{2,1}$ | Genz | 37.357 | 37.351 | 37.348 | 37.348 | 37.348 |
| $\mathrm{~L}_{2,2}$ | Genz | -0.138 | -0.194 | -0.211 | -0.212 | -0.212 |

systematically located on only one side of the horizontal line. Genz estimates, as seen in table 2.7, are centered around the vertical line.

The last thing that we are checking is the computation of standard deviations, using the Hessian matrix estimated at the maximum. Tables 2.8 and 2.9 report estimated standard deviations for ten samples. Not surprisingly, Genz produces valid estimates for the standard deviation for all ten samples. Simulation generates either "NaN" (corresponding to negative variance estimates) or extremely low values that do not compare at all with the actual standard deviations that we computed from the sample of estimates.

Table 2.5: Gradient for $\mathrm{p}_{4}$

| parameter | method | 0.1 | 0.05 | 0.01 | 0.005 | 0.001 |
| :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- |
|  |  | -63630.125 | -49573.247 | -462.302 | -421.832 | -353.12 |
| $\mathrm{~B}_{4}$ | sim | 10661.369 | 14185.278 | 35248.158 | 70337.149 | 16.018 |
| $\mathrm{~B}_{5}$ | sim | 45804.555 | 14195.608 | 35258.397 | 196.565 | 323.937 |
| $\mathrm{~B}_{6}$ | sim | 28211.412 | 28211.698 | 70319.588 | 140507.71 | 114.084 |
| $\mathrm{~L}_{2,1}$ | sim | -3453.588 | 7066.678 | 35182.926 | 70280.602 | 27.259 |
| $\mathrm{~L}_{2,2}$ | sim | 116260.976 | 91673.341 | 70605.627 | 140924.867 | 419.104 |
| $\mathrm{~B}_{1}$ | Genz | -1355.695 | -1355.331 | -1355.215 | -1355.211 | -1355.21 |
| $\mathrm{~B}_{4}$ | Genz | 119.558 | 119.461 | 119.43 | 119.429 | 119.429 |
| $\mathrm{~B}_{5}$ | Genz | 1241.001 | 1240.998 | 1240.998 | 1240.998 | 1240.998 |
| $\mathrm{~B}_{6}$ | Genz | 812.548 | 812.548 | 812.548 | 812.548 | 812.548 |
| $\mathrm{~L}_{2,1}$ | Genz | -701.884 | -702.625 | -702.869 | -702.876 | -702.879 |
| $\mathrm{~L}_{2,2}$ | Genz | 3283.488 | 3238.467 | 3224.271 | 3223.829 | 3223.688 |

Table 2.6: Gradient for $\mathrm{p}_{5}$

| parameter | method | $\delta$ |  |  |  |  |  |
| :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :---: |
|  |  | 0.1 | 0.05 | 0.01 | 0.005 | 0.001 |  |
| $\mathrm{~B}_{1}$ | sim | -7091.145 | -71.023 | -103.992 | -117.655 | -189.794 |  |
| $\mathrm{~B}_{4}$ | $\operatorname{sim}$ | 14157.719 | 7140.723 | 154.233 | 139.789 | 123.474 |  |
| $\mathrm{~B}_{5}$ | sim | 7134.73 | 7116.737 | 118.627 | 112.184 | 163.104 |  |
| $\mathrm{~B}_{6}$ | sim | -3502.577 | -7014.763 | 15.261 | 28.761 | 15.875 |  |
| $\mathrm{~L}_{2,1}$ | sim | -3503.259 | 3.608 | 3.604 | -2.549 | -9.236 |  |
| $\mathrm{~L}_{2,2}$ | sim | 7076.781 | 7081.78 | 27.708 | 14.396 | -7.037 |  |
| $\mathrm{~B}_{1}$ | Genz | -2867.129 | 244.117 | 244.155 | 244.158 | 244.105 |  |
| $\mathrm{~B}_{4}$ | Genz | 709.739 | 709.638 | 709.607 | 709.626 | 709.315 |  |
| $\mathrm{~B}_{5}$ | Genz | -2301.384 | -5405.096 | 819.638 | 819.612 | 819.549 |  |
| $\mathrm{~B}_{6}$ | Genz | 3107.24 | -6.911 | -6.909 | -6.921 | -7.024 |  |
| $\mathrm{~L}_{2,1}$ | Genz | -388.526 | -389.334 | -386.44 | -386.277 | -386.196 |  |
| $\mathrm{~L}_{2,2}$ | Genz | -2752.692 | -5874.956 | 380.991 | 380.968 | 380.979 |  |

Table 2.7: 375 samples with sim. and Genz estimation

| parameter | real | mean-Sim | sd-Sim | mean-Genz | sd-Genz |
| :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- |
| $\beta_{1}$ | -1.000 | -1.384 | 0.173 | -1.024 | 0.130 |
| $\beta_{4}$ | 1.000 | 1.391 | 0.210 | 1.018 | 0.139 |
| $\beta_{5}$ | 1.000 | 1.408 | 0.237 | 1.021 | 0.152 |
| $\beta_{6}$ | 1.000 | 1.415 | 0.262 | 1.016 | 0.146 |
| $\mathrm{~L}_{2,1}$ | 0.500 | 0.611 | 0.388 | 0.491 | 0.145 |
| $\mathrm{~L}_{2,2}$ | 0.866 | 1.308 | 0.692 | 0.863 | 0.164 |

Figure 2.3: Log-likelihood at $\mathrm{p}_{1}$


Table 2.8: Standard Errors with Simulation

| names \sample | real | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 | 7 | 8 | 9 |
| :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- |
| $\beta_{1}$ | 0.182 | 0.003 | 0.011 | 0.006 | NaN | 0.011 | 0.000 | NaN | 0.000 | 0.000 |
| $\beta_{4}$ | 0.216 | 0.007 | 0.004 | NaN | 0.005 | 0.011 | 0.004 | NaN | 0.000 | 0.000 |
| $\beta_{5}$ | 0.245 | 0.008 | 0.007 | 0.005 | NaN | 0.008 | NaN | NaN | 0.000 | NaN |
| $\beta_{6}$ | 0.190 | 0.030 | NaN | NaN | 0.007 | 0.012 | NaN | NaN | 0.007 | 0.007 |
| $\mathrm{~L}_{2,1}$ | 0.348 | 0.014 | 0.009 | 0.008 | 0.007 | 0.007 | NaN | NaN | 0.005 | 0.011 |
| $\mathrm{~L}_{2,2}$ | 0.256 | 0.010 | NaN | 0.016 | NaN | 0.024 | 0.004 | NaN | 0.005 | 0.019 |
| NaN |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |
| NaN |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |

Table 2.9: Standard Errors with Genz

| names \ sample | real | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 | 7 | 8 | 9 | 10 |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $\beta_{1}$ | 0.116 | 0.119 | 0.107 | 0.103 | 0.084 | 0.144 | 0.093 | 0.118 | 0.102 | 0.148 | 0.145 |
| $\beta_{4}$ | 0.138 | 0.152 | 0.114 | 0.120 | 0.095 | 0.140 | 0.101 | 0.129 | 0.108 | 0.163 | 0.156 |
| $\beta_{5}$ | 0.139 | 0.140 | 0.148 | 0.111 | 0.107 | 0.153 | 0.114 | 0.138 | 0.115 | 0.168 | 0.152 |
| $\beta_{6}$ | 0.132 | 0.159 | 0.132 | 0.124 | 0.107 | 0.165 | 0.112 | 0.135 | 0.120 | 0.164 | 0.167 |
| $\mathrm{L}_{2,1}$ | 0.145 | 0.195 | 0.132 | 0.129 | 0.100 | 0.143 | 0.100 | 0.134 | 0.110 | 0.170 | 0.201 |
| $\mathrm{L}_{2,2}$ | 0.139 | 0.178 | 0.149 | 0.127 | 0.114 | 0.168 | 0.111 | 0.153 | 0.120 | 0.180 | 0.191 |

Figure 2.4: Log-likelihood at $\mathrm{p}_{2}$


Figure 2.5: Log-likelihood at $\mathrm{p}_{3}$


Figure 2.6: Log-likelihood at $\mathrm{p}_{4}$


Figure 2.7: Log-likelihood at $\mathrm{p}_{5}$


Figure 2.8: Comparison of Genz and simulation estimates


# Chapter 3: Ordered and Unordered Discrete-Continuous Probit model with application to vehicle ownership and use 

### 3.1 Introduction

Recently, the advance in the estimation of complex econometric models has allowed analysts to develop comprehensive model systems that jointly analyze multiple choice dimensions. These integrated structures are motivated by the assumption that the different decisions are taken at the same time and are therefore correlated. These modeling frameworks often contain dependent variables that do not belong to the same family (i.e. discrete and continuous variables). This is the case of integrated model for vehicle ownership, where discrete decisions (number of cars, their type and vintage) are naturally linked to continuous decisions (vehicle miles traveled).

In this Chapter we formulate an unordered discrete continuous probit model and we apply it to data on car ownership and use. The unordered discrete-continuous model, is based on multinomial probit and linear regression with unrestricted variancecovariance correlation matrix between the discrete (vehicle holding) and the continuous (vehicle usage) parts. The ordered discrete-continuous structure has a similar
structure with the exception of an ordered probit for the vehicle holding sub-model. The paper also explores the use of numerical approximations methods Gen92 to overcome problems related to the simulations of probit likelihood functions; notably, the high computational costs, and the instability of the Hessian estimation. The analysis is performed on data extracted from the 2009 National Household Travel Survey [UDoT09]. A summary of this work has recently been published in a peerreviewed journal CLT16.

This comparative exercise is motivated by the fact that ordered discretecontinuous models are relatively easier to estimate when compared to unordered model structure due to their closed mathematical form. However, the assumption that vehicle ownership decisions are measured by a single latent variable might affect the goodness of fit of the model and its performance in model application and policy analysis.

### 3.2 Literature review

Vehicle ownership plays an important role in transportation and land use planning. It is one of the key determinants of people's travel behavior, as it greatly impacts people's mode choice [SW09], frequency of trips SK12], destination choice, trip timing, activity duration and trip chaining RCM09. Vehicle ownership models are also used by policy makers to identify factors that affect vehicle miles traveled (VMT), and therefore address the problems related to traffic congestion, gas consumption and air pollution DG97, HKT01. In this context, ordered probit models
are in general preferred to unordered probit for the saving in computational costs deriving from the closed mathematical form of the choice probabilities.

The earliest generation of discrete-continuous models on vehicle ownership decisions were derived from conditional indirect utility function Tra86] HBSM92] dJ89b dJ89a dJ91, which is based on micro-economic theory. Originally developed by Dubin and McFadden DM84, and Hanemann Han84, the basic concept is that the households choose the combination of vehicle ownership and vehicle usage that gives the highest utility. Roy's identity is applied to estimate vehicle usage and the relationship between the two modeling stages.

Multiple discrete-continuous extreme value (MDCEV) models, developed by Bhat Bha05 and further applied in Bhat and Sen BS06 and Bhat et al. BSE09] are utility-based econometric models that jointly estimate the holding of multiple vehicle types and the miles for each vehicle type. The choice and dependent variable in this model is the mileage for each vehicle type category. Utility for each household is maximized subject to a total mileage budget. Fang Fan80 developed a BMOPT (Bayesian Multivariate Ordered Probit and Tobit) model, which is composed of a multivariate ordered probit model for the discrete choices and a multivariate Tobit model for the continuous choice. Liu et al. [TTC14 proposed a joint discrete-continuous model to estimate household choices on vehicle holding, type and usage. The discrete components are respectively, multinomial probit for vehicle holding and multinomial logit for the vehicle type sub-models. The joint discrete-continuous model is estimated with unrestricted correlation between the discrete and continuous parts.

Two types of discrete choice modeling structures have been used in the household vehicle ownership studies: ordered-response mechanism and unordered-response mechanism. The ordered-response mechanism assumes that household vehicle ownership is represented as an ordinal variable and the choice is determined by a single latent variable which represents the propensity of the household vehicle ownership decisions. Examples of the application of ordered-response mechanism are Kitamura Kit87], Golob and Van Wissen [GV89], Golob Gol90], Kitamura and Bunch KB92, Bhat and Koppelman BK93, Kitamura et al. KGYW99, Hanly and Dargay [HD00], Chu [Chu02], Kim and Kim KK04] and Cao et al. [CMH07]. The unordered-response mechanism is based on the hypothesis that household vehicle ownership is represented as a nominal variable. It follows the random utility maximization (RUM) principle which assumes that the household makes the vehicle ownership decisions that provides the highest utility among all the possible choices. Examples of the studies with unordered-response mechanism are Mannering and Winston MW85], Train Tra86], Bunch and Kitamura BK90], Purvis Pur94], Ryan and Han RH99, Whelan Whe07. The reader is referred to Table 3.1 for a more comprehensive description of a sample of these papers.

In the context of the comparison of the ordered and unordered mechanisms, there are several papers that explicitly investigate the empirical performance of the two structures in modeling vehicle ownership decisions. Bhat and Pulugurta [BP98] compared the multinomial logit (MNL) model and the ordered logit (ORL) model on four datasets from Boston, Bay area, Puget Sound area and the Netherlands. The two mechanisms were evaluated by comparing elasticity effects, measure of fit and
predictive performance. The results showed that the MNL model is able to capture elasticity patterns across alternatives, while the ORL is more rigid in elasticity effects. The conclusion from this study is that the appropriate choice mechanism for vehicle ownership modeling is the unordered-response structure. Potoglou and Susilo PK08 compared the multinomial logit, ordered logit and ordered probit models for car ownership by using data from Baltimore, the Netherlands and Japan. Their results clearly demonstrate the superiority of the MNL to the ordered ORL and ORP. In a study aiming at estimating population heterogeneity in the context of car ownership, Anowar et al. [AYEMM14] propose the application of latent class versions of ordered (ordered logit) and unordered response (multinomial logit) models. The latent class models offer superior data fit compared to their traditional counterparts. In summary, those studies provided strong evidence that the appropriate mechanism is the unordered response mechanism for the vehicle ownership models. However, it is important to stress that the ordered and unordered models have been compared for vehicle holding models only and other applications may lead to different conclusions.

### 3.3 Ordered discrete-continuous model formulation

The ordered response structure uses latent variables to represent the vehicle ownership propensity of the household, thus it is not consistent with utility maximization theory. Suppose two latent variables $\mathrm{Y}_{\mathrm{d}}$ and $\mathrm{Y}_{\mathrm{r}}$ represent the preference levels for vehicle holding and vehicle usage (annual miles traveled). The ordered

Table 3.1: Summary of vehicle ownership, type and usage models

| Reference | Data <br> (Year)Source | Sample Size | Choices Examined | Model |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| Tra86 | US (1978) | 1095 household | vehicle quantity, class/vintage, usage | MNL and Regression |
| MW85 | US (1978-1980) | 3842 households | quantity choice, type choice, utilization model | Nested Logit and OLS regression |
| HBSM92 | Sydney (1981- 1985) | $\begin{aligned} & 1444,1295,1251, \\ & 1197 \end{aligned}$ | static vehicle choice and type-mix choice, Static vehicle use, dynamic vehicle choice and use | Nested Logit and 3SLS regression |
| KB92 | Dutch National <br> Mobility Panel <br> Data set  | $\begin{array}{lr} \hline \text { Panel, } 605 & \mathrm{HH}, \\ (1984-1987) \end{array}$ | vehicle quantity | Ordered Probit |
| dJ96 | Dutch National Mobility Panel Data set (Oct, 1992; Oct 1993) | Panel, 3241 respondents | vehicle holding duration, vehicle type choice, annual kilometrage and fuel efficiency | Hazard function, Nested logit, Regres- sion |
| BP98 | US (1991, 1990, <br> 1991), Dutch <br> $(1987)$  | $\begin{aligned} & 3665,3500,1822, \\ & 1807 \end{aligned}$ | vehicle quantity $(0,1,2,3,4)$ | MNL and Ordered logit |
| KGYW99 | California (1993) | Panel (First <br> wave), 4747 <br> households  | 1) vehicle holding model, and $n$. of vehicle per HH member and per driver, 2) vehicle type choice, 3) vehicle use | Ordered probit model, Tobit model; MNL; OLS regression |
| DG97 | UK, Family Expenditure Survey $(1982-1993)$ | panel, cohort, 7200 households | vehicle quantity | dynamic cohort (panel) |
| BS06 | San Francisco <br> $(2000)$  | 3500 households | vehicle type holding and usage | MDCEV (multiple discrete-continuous extreme value model) |
| Whe07 | $\begin{aligned} & \hline \text { UK, } \quad(1971-1996) \\ & \text { and NTS }(1991) \end{aligned}$ | unknown | vehicle quantity ( $0,1,2,3+$ ) | Hierarchical logit model with saturation level |
| Fan80 | NHTS (2001, CA) | 2299 households | vehicle choice and usage (BMOPT and MDCEV) | BMOPT (Bayesian <br> Multivariate Ordered <br> Probit and Tobit) and MDCEV |
| PK08 | NHTS (2001, Baltimore), Dutch National Mobility Survey (2005), Osaka Metropoli$\tan$ Trip survey (2000) | $\begin{aligned} & 3496, \\ & 12632 \end{aligned} \quad 28436,$ | vehicle quantity | MNL and Ordered  <br> logit and Ordered  <br> Probit   |
| BPPL13 | NHTS (2009) | 1480 | residential and work location, vehicle ownership and tour characteristics | MDCP (multiple discrete-continuous probit) |
| LTC14 | NHTS (2009) | 1420 | Vehicle quantity, vehicle type and vintage, AVMT | Unordered discretecontinuous probit |

discrete-continuous model can be written as:

$$
\begin{array}{r}
\mathrm{y}_{\mathrm{d}}=\mathrm{X}_{\mathrm{d}}^{\mathrm{T}} \beta_{\mathrm{d}}+\epsilon_{\mathrm{d}}  \tag{3.1}\\
\mathrm{y}_{\mathrm{r}}=\mathrm{X}_{\mathrm{r}}^{\mathrm{T}} \beta_{\mathrm{r}}+\epsilon_{\mathrm{r}}
\end{array}
$$

where $X_{d}$ and $X_{r}$ are explanatory variables for the discrete choice and continuous choice, $\beta_{\mathrm{d}}$ and $\beta_{\mathrm{r}}$ are the coefficients to be estimated and $\epsilon_{\mathrm{d}}$ and $\epsilon_{\mathrm{r}}$ are the
error terms.
The number of vehicles $(\mathrm{Y})$ held by the household is determined by the value of latent variable $y_{d}$, which is discretized by a number of cutoff points $\gamma_{1}, \ldots, \gamma_{k-1}$. The value of Y is determined by which cutpoints enclose $\mathrm{y}_{\mathrm{d}}$ :

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \mathrm{y}_{\mathrm{d}}<0 \quad \Rightarrow \quad \mathrm{Y}=0 \\
& 0<\mathrm{y}_{\mathrm{d}}<\gamma_{1} \Rightarrow \mathrm{Y}=1 \\
& \gamma_{1}<\mathrm{y}_{\mathrm{d}}<\gamma_{2} \Rightarrow \mathrm{Y}=2 \\
& \gamma_{\mathrm{k}-2}<\mathrm{y}_{\mathrm{d}}<\gamma_{\mathrm{k}-1} \Rightarrow \mathrm{Y}=\mathrm{k}-1 \\
& \gamma_{\mathrm{k}-1}<\mathrm{y}_{\mathrm{d}} \quad \Rightarrow \mathrm{Y}=\mathrm{k}
\end{aligned}
$$

Like in the unordered version, in order to jointly to capture the correlation between the discrete and continuous parts the error terms are correlated. Thus, the error terms follow a bivariate normal distribution:

$$
\begin{align*}
& \left(\epsilon_{\mathrm{d}}, \epsilon_{\mathrm{r}}\right) \sim \mathrm{N}(0, \Sigma)  \tag{3.2}\\
& \Sigma=\left[\begin{array}{cc}
1 & \rho \sigma_{\mathrm{r}} \\
\rho \sigma_{\mathrm{r}} & \sigma_{\mathrm{r}}^{2}
\end{array}\right] \tag{3.3}
\end{align*}
$$

Therefore, the model is composed of an ordered probit model and a regression with unrestricted correlation between the error terms.

The estimation scheme is the same than in the unordered model, with a simpler conditioning. The joint probability is separated like this:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathrm{P}\left(\mathrm{Y}, \mathrm{Y}_{\mathrm{r}}\right)=\mathrm{P}\left(\mathrm{Y}_{\mathrm{r}}\right) \mathrm{P}\left(\mathrm{Y} \mid \mathrm{Y}_{\mathrm{r}}=\mathrm{y}_{\mathrm{r}}\right) \tag{3.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

The effect on conditioning. is to be able to estimate $\epsilon_{\mathrm{r}}$. For a bivariate normal
distribution, $\epsilon_{\mathrm{d}} \mid \epsilon_{\mathrm{r}}$ follows a normal distribution with the following parameters:

$$
\begin{array}{r}
\mu_{\epsilon_{\mathrm{d}} \mid \epsilon_{\mathrm{r}}}=\rho \frac{\epsilon_{\mathrm{r}}}{\sigma}  \tag{3.5}\\
\sigma_{\epsilon_{\mathrm{d}} \mid \epsilon_{\mathrm{r}}}^{2}=1-\rho^{2}
\end{array}
$$

It is interesting to note that the conditional variance $\sigma_{\epsilon_{\mathrm{d}} \mid \epsilon_{\mathrm{r}}}^{2}$ does not depend on the observed value $\epsilon_{\mathrm{r}}$. The effect of conditioning. on the variance is to uniformly decrease it.

### 3.4 Data description

Table 3.2: Descriptive Statistics - NHTS 2009

| Variables | by Number of cars |  |  |  |  | Statistics for all vehicle holding cases |  |  |  |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
|  | 0 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | min | max | median | mean | s.d. |
| Vehicle ownership | 7.28\% | 26.72\% | 43.49\% | 17.03\% | 5.48\% | 0 | 4 | 2 | 1.87 | 0.96 |
| Hhld. Income level | 6.47 | 10.98 | 14.55 | 15.29 | 15.99 | 1 | 18 | 16 | 13.21 | 5.30 |
| Num. of adult | 1.31 | 1.40 | 1.99 | 2.21 | 2.76 | 1 | 5 | 2 | 1.86 | 0.66 |
| Num. of workers | 0.53 | 0.69 | 1.16 | 1.44 | 1.63 | 0 | 4 | 1 | 1.06 | 0.83 |
| Num. of drivers | 0.75 | 1.26 | 1.98 | 2.32 | 2.83 | 0 | 5 | 2 | 1.80 | 0.77 |
| Owned house | 0.45 | 0.75 | 0.91 | 0.97 | 0.98 | 0 | 1 | 1 | 0.85 | 0.36 |
| Urban area | 0.94 | 0.84 | 0.75 | 0.60 | 0.56 | 0 | 1 | 1 | 0.75 | 0.43 |
| Urban size | 4.94 | 4.25 | 3.60 | 2.95 | 2.55 | 1 | 6 | 5 | 3.70 | 2.29 |
| Use of PT | 0.26 | 0.08 | 0.06 | 0.05 | 0.06 | 0 | 1 | 0 | 0.08 | 0.27 |
| Age of hhld head | 59.13 | 60.51 | 53.12 | 52.16 | 53.00 | 18 | 95 | 54 | 55.36 | 14.91 |
| Female hhld head | 0.78 | 0.64 | 0.52 | 0.55 | 0.44 | 0 | 1 | 1 | 0.57 | 0.49 |
| Educ. of hhld head | 2.78 | 3.40 | 3.67 | 3.52 | 3.33 | 1 | 5 | 4 | 3.49 | 1.21 |
| Housing unit per sq mile | 7233 | 3637 | 1341 | 797 | 626 | 50 | 30000 | 750 | 2252 | 4220 |
| Percent renter-occupied | 50 | 32 | 22 | 18 | 17 | 0 | 95 | 20 | 26 | 21 |
| Population per sq mile | 12153 | 6931 | 3408 | 2363 | 1888 | 50 | 30000 | 3000 | 4725 | 6333 |
| Workers per sq mile | 2870 | 1899 | 1042 | 640 | 453 | 25 | 5000 | 350 | 1303 | 1660 |
| VMT | 0 | 10361 | 23890 | 35781 | 48728 | 0 | 91329 | 19097 | 21554 | 16381 |

The primary data source used in this study is the 2009 National Household Travel Survey UDoT09. The analysis is restricted to the Washington D.C. metropolitan area, for which 1,420 observations are available. Household characteristics, land-use variables and information on each household vehicle, are the main variables extracted from the original dataset. Table 3.2 lists the basic statistics relative to the household sample. For the Washington D.C. metropolitan area, the average vehicle ownership per household is 1.87 . The percentage of the household
without a car is $7.28 \%$, mainly low-income households; while most households hold 2 cars $(43.49 \%)$. The number of cars in the household is highly associated with the number of adults and the number of drivers in the family. More than half of the households who do not have a car do not own a house. The land use variables, such as dummy of urban area, urban size, population density and housing density, greatly influence the household car ownership decisions. The households with more cars are generally located in less dense or more rural area. In the Washington D.C. metropolitan area, the average age of the household head is around 55 years old, which is somehow an indication of the aging society happening in western countries. Households with zero or one car have older household head. The average education level in this area is college/bachelors degree; however, households without a car have much lower education level. The average annual mileage traveled by a household is around 20,000 miles per year. The mileage traveled increases accordingly with the household car ownership.

### 3.5 Empirical results

In this Section results from model estimation (see table 3.3) are presented. We estimated four models: unordered discrete continuous probit model with Monte Carlo simulation (Model 1); unordered discrete continuous probit model with numerical computation in order to test the performance of the Genz approximation (Model 2); ordered discrete continuous probit model (Model 3) having the same formulation of Model 1 and 2 with the exception of the logsum, and unordered discrete
continuous probit model estimated using Genz method and without logsum (Model 4) to compare the fit of the model with Model 2.

The utility functions for the unordered model are the following:

$$
\begin{align*}
& \mathrm{U}_{0}=0 \\
& \mathrm{U}_{\mathrm{j}}=\text { asc }_{\mathrm{j}}+\beta_{\text {inc }} \cdot \text { income }+\beta_{\text {gen }} \cdot \text { female }+\beta_{\text {urb }} \cdot \text { urban-size }+\beta_{\text {den }} \cdot \text { density }  \tag{3.6}\\
& \\
& \quad(\mathrm{j}=1, \ldots, 4)
\end{align*}
$$

The latent variable for the ordered model is:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathrm{Y}=\beta_{0}+\beta_{\mathrm{inc}} \cdot \text { income }+\beta_{\mathrm{gen}} \cdot \text { female }+\beta_{\mathrm{urb}} \cdot \text { urban-size }+\beta_{\mathrm{den}} \cdot \text { density } \tag{3.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

Even if the coefficients (for example $\beta_{\mathrm{inc}}$ ) have the same name between the two specifications, it is implicit that they are different, since they do not belong in the same model. "asc" refers to Alternative Specific Constants.

The empirical equation for the regression is:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathrm{Y}_{\mathrm{reg}}=\beta_{0}^{\mathrm{r}}+\beta_{\mathrm{inc}}^{\mathrm{r}} \cdot \text { income }+\beta_{\mathrm{home}}^{\mathrm{r}} \cdot \text { own-home }+\beta_{\text {den }}^{\mathrm{r}} \cdot \text { density }+\beta_{\mathrm{cost}}^{\mathrm{r}} \cdot \text { driving-cost } \tag{3.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

Where the superscript $r$ indicates that even if the coefficients may have the same name as their discrete counterpart, they are distinct from them.

### 3.5.1 Coefficients estimation

Different types of coefficients enter the final specification of the models in table 3.3. In particular a logsum coefficient is estimated in the unordered structure. The logsum represents a feedback variable from the class/vintage models and reflects the utility derived by the household from its choice of class and vintage for each
car in the household. In this case four different type/vintage models have been estimated respectively for household owning 1, 2, 3 and 4 vehicles and therefore four logsum values have been calculated. For more details on the specification of the type/vintage model the reader is referred to Liu et al LTC14. The logsum coefficient is constrained to be equal for all the alternatives as in Train Tra86; other specifications containing logsum coefficients specific of the alternatives have been tested but results did not improve significantly the fit of the model. The logsum coefficient is positive, significant and less than one; which is similar to what obtained by Train Tra86]. It should be noted that it was not possible to estimate the logsum variable in the ordered probit model. This represents a further limitation of the ordered probit model as the logsum variable significantly improves the fit of the model as it can be seen for the comparison of the final log-likelihood value of Models 2 and 4.

Most of the estimated coefficients have the expected sign and are significant. Positive coefficients of household income, in both the discrete and continuous parts of the model, indicate that households with higher income have higher tendency to own more vehicles and drive more. In the unordered models, the magnitude increases as the number of vehicles in the household increases. Similar results can be found in Bhat and Pulugurta BP98] and Potoglu and Susilo PK08]. The coefficients of number of drivers in the household are very significant, indicating that this factor has high effects on how many cars a household owns. This coefficient is positive in the ordered structure, and also positive in the unordered structure with an exception for the one-car households. The negative coefficient for one-car household alternative
indicates that, the more drivers in the household, the less likely they own only one car. Similarly, households with female household head are less likely to own more vehicles.

Urban size is an indicator of the urbanization level in the area of the household location, in which the lower value represents urban areas and the higher value represents rural areas. Residential density is an indication of the built environment around the household location. The coefficients of these two variables are significantly negative (with the exception of the one-car household alternative) and have higher magnitude as the households own more cars in the unordered structure. In both modeling structures (ordered and unordered probit models) households located in highly residential areas are more likely to own fewer cars and to drive less; households located in a more rural area have higher probability of having more cars and drive more.

The driving cost (measured in dollars per mile) results to be significant and negative, indicating that higher driving cost induces the households to drive less.

### 3.5.2 Covariance matrix estimation

The covariance matrices of the four models are reported in tables 3.4, 3.5, 3.6 and 3.7. In the unordered discrete-continuous models, the bottom line of the matrix explains the correlation between the mileage traveled and the utility differences of the vehicle holding alternatives with respect to the alternative of owning zero car. In mathematical terms, the estimation of the correlation factors modifies the
values of differences in utility and reduces the variance of those differences, which ultimately contributes to a better forecasting of both the discrete and the continuous components of the model. Generally, the correlation between annual VMT and vehicle holding levels (with respect to zero-car alternative) increases from the one-car alternative to the three-car alternative, and then declines for the four car alternative, probably because in this case very few observations are available in the sample. These results are consistent across Model 1 and Model 2; while in Model 4 the correlation terms are all positive and follow a consistent increasing trend with the number of alternatives.

In the ordered discrete-continuous models, the correlation between the number of vehicles and mileage traveled is positive and equal to 0.5 , which means that the demand of vehicle usage increases the propensity of owning more cars.

### 3.5.3 Goodness of fit

By comparing the measures of fit of the unordered probit with numerical computation (Model 2) and the one obtained with the Monte-Carlo simulation (Model 1) with 1000 MC draws, it should be noted that the approximation method has a better fit and that the Hessian is more stable, which facilitates the computation of coefficients' t-statistics. However, in this case the values of the standard errors were obtained with Bootstrap techniques for both Model 1 and 2.

The log-likelihood values from the ordered (Model 3) and unordered models (Model 4), both calibrated without the logsum variable) cannot be directly com-
pared because of the different model structure, number of parameters and number of observations. Therefore, the adjusted $R^{2}$ is calculated as follows:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathrm{R}^{2}=1-\frac{\mathrm{LL}(\hat{\beta})-\mathrm{n}_{\mathrm{par}}}{\mathrm{LL}(0)} \tag{3.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\operatorname{LL}(\hat{\beta})$ is the value of the log-likelihood function at convergence, LL (0) is the value of the log-likelihood function at $0(\beta=0)$, and $\mathrm{n}_{\text {par }}$ is the number of parameters estimated in the model.

A non-nested test has been also conducted for the ordered and unordered models. This test determines if the adjusted $\mathrm{R}^{2}$ of two non-nested models are significantly different. The same method is used as in Bhat and Pulugurta BP98:
"If the difference in the adjusted $\mathrm{R}^{2}$ is $\tau$, then the probability that this difference could have occurred by chance, in the asymptotic limit, is bounded by:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Phi\left(-\left(-2 \tau \mathrm{LL}(0)+\left(\mathrm{n}_{\mathrm{par}, 2}-\mathrm{n}_{\mathrm{par}, 1}\right)\right)^{0.5}\right) \tag{3.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

in the asymptotic limit. A small value of the probability of chance occurrence indicates that the difference is statistically significant and that the model with the higher value of adjusted likelihood ratio index is to be preferred. "

The values of the adjusted $R^{2}$ and those obtained with the non-nested test for the four models are reported in table 3.3. We observe that the unordered discretecontinuous models have higher goodness of fit. The unordered models have higher log-likelihood and adjusted $\mathrm{R}^{2}$; the non-nested test attests that the unordered mod-
els significantly improve the model fit when compared to the ordered models.

Table 3.3: Estimation Results

| Variable | Model 1 |  | Model 2 |  | Model 3 |  | Model 4 |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
|  | Estimate | s.e. | Estimate | s.e. | Estimate | s.e. | Estimate | s.e. |
| Dependent variable: Number of cars |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |
| Logsum | 0.388 | 0.012 | 0.515 | 0.018 |  |  |  |  |
| Constant |  |  |  |  | 0.363 | 0.111 |  |  |
| 1 car | 2.863 | 0.237 | -2.948 | 0.217 |  |  | 1.368 | 0.096 |
| 2 cars | -8.700 | 0.098 | -21.889 | 0.284 |  |  | -4.432 | 1.039 |
| 3 cars | -14.404 | 0.188 | -28.931 | 0.257 |  |  | -4.918 | 0.113 |
| 4 cars | -21.385 | 0.201 | -35.658 | 0.245 |  |  | -11.288 | 0.114 |
| Income |  |  |  |  | 0.086 | 0.006 |  |  |
| 1 car | -0.051 | 0.011 | -0.101 | 0.020 |  |  | 0.151 | 0.010 |
| 2 cars | 0.056 | 0.006 | 0.692 | 0.072 |  |  | 0.395 | 0.029 |
| 3 cars | 0.105 | 0.010 | 0.745 | 0.077 |  |  | 0.429 | 0.028 |
| 4 cars | 0.111 | 0.012 | 0.693 | 0.074 |  |  | 0.327 | 0.026 |
| num. of drivers |  |  |  |  | 0.608 | 0.057 |  |  |
| 1 car | -0.010 | 0.007 | -0.304 | 0.236 |  |  | -0.048 | 0.027 |
| 2 cars | 3.223 | 0.079 | 9.236 | 0.214 |  |  | 2.111 | 0.215 |
| 3 cars | 4.041 | 0.102 | 10.167 | 0.190 |  |  | 1.742 | 0.086 |
| 4 cars | 4.432 | 0.092 | 10.120 | 0.165 |  |  | 3.314 | 0.142 |
| gender (female) |  |  |  |  | -0.235 | 0.063 |  |  |
| 1 car | -0.129 | 0.551 | -0.063 | 0.249 |  |  | -0.054 | 0.068 |
| 2 cars | -0.874 | 0.054 | -3.434 | 0.213 |  |  | -0.732 | 0.245 |
| 3 cars | -0.928 | 0.073 | -3.605 | 0.211 |  |  | -0.854 | 0.281 |
| 4 cars | -0.885 | 0.059 | -3.667 | 0.194 |  |  | -2.208 | 0.360 |
| urban size |  |  |  |  | -0.032 | 0.013 |  |  |
| 1 car | 0.077 | 0.035 | -0.109 | 0.058 |  |  | -0.013 | 0.028 |
| 2 cars | -0.120 | 0.074 | -0.270 | 0.178 |  |  | 0.103 | 0.277 |
| 3 cars | -0.199 | 0.093 | -0.354 | 0.186 |  |  | -0.038 | 0.018 |
| 4 cars | -0.201 | 0.084 | -0.406 | 0.183 |  |  | -0.368 | 0.063 |
| res. Density |  |  |  |  | -0.103 | 0.010 |  |  |
| 1 car | 0.041 | 0.005 | 0.101 | 0.015 |  |  | -0.168 | 0.017 |
| 2 cars | -0.223 | 0.034 | -1.112 | 0.159 |  |  | -0.472 | 0.036 |
| 3 cars | -0.442 | 0.054 | -1.298 | 0.181 |  |  | -0.740 | 0.070 |
| 4 cars | -0.484 | 0.064 | -1.262 | 0.170 |  |  | -0.599 | 0.183 |
| $\alpha_{1}$ |  |  |  |  | 1.580 |  |  |  |
| $\alpha_{2}$ |  |  |  |  | 3.149 |  |  |  |
| $\alpha_{3}$ |  |  |  |  | 4.201 |  |  |  |
| Dependent variable: VMT (10k) |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |
| Constant | 1.130 | 0.102 | 1.385 | 0.116 | 1.473 | 0.105 | 1.456 | 0.068 |
| Income | 0.129 | 0.005 | 0.128 | 0.007 | 0.132 | 0.006 | 0.127 | 0.066 |
| own home | 0.671 | 0.277 | 0.328 | 0.098 | 0.258 | 0.072 | 0.296 | 0.060 |
| gender (female) | -0.056 | 0.034 | -0.095 | 0.061 | -0.080 | 0.059 | -0.035 | 0.013 |
| res. density | -0.113 | 0.008 | -0.118 | 0.009 | -0.120 | 0.011 | -0.117 | 0.006 |
| driving cost (\$ per mile) | -5.103 | 0.283 | -4.670 | 0.285 | -5.133 | 0.238 | -4.967 | 0.098 |
| Log-likelihood at zero | -9583.87 |  | -9583.87 |  | -9583.87 |  | -9583.87 |  |
| Log-likelihood at convergence | -3349.81 |  | -3288.93 |  | -3607.75 |  | -3472.51 |  |
| Number of parameters | 25 |  | 25 |  | 10 |  | 24 |  |
| Number of observations | 1420 |  | 1420 |  | 1420 |  | 1420 |  |
| Adjusted R ${ }^{2}$ | 0.648 |  | 0.654 |  | 0.623 |  | 0.635 |  |
| Likelihood ratio test | $367.16>\chi_{25,0.01}$ |  |  |  | - |  |  |  |
| Non-nested test result | - |  |  |  | $\Phi(15.98)=1.34 \mathrm{e}-56$ |  |  |  |
| Model 1: unordered discrete continuous probit model with simulation <br> Model 2: unordered discrete continuous probit model with numerical computation <br> Model 3: ordered discrete continuous probit model <br> Model 4: unordered discrete continuous probit model without logsum |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |
|  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |
|  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |
|  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |

### 3.5.4 Results from model application

The models 2 and 3 have been applied to test policy scenarios; the variables of interest are income, density and driving cost. The scenarios considered are listed in table 3.8 .

Results in table 3.3 show the effects of those variables on vehicle holding and

Table 3.4: Covariance Matrix, Model 1, Unordered Monte Carlo

|  | 1 car | 2 cars | 3 cars | 4 cars | VMT |
| :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- |
| 1 car | 2.00 | 1.14 | 1.31 | 1.30 | 0.27 |
| 2 cars | 1.14 | 1.63 | 0.37 | 0.76 | 0.10 |
| 3 cars | 1.31 | 0.37 | 2.37 | 1.68 | 0.67 |
| 4 cars | 1.30 | 0.76 | 1.68 | 1.36 | 0.46 |
| VMT | -0.27 | 0.10 | 0.67 | 0.46 | 1.23 |

Table 3.5: Covariance Matrix, Model 2, Genz

|  | 1 car | 2 cars | 3 cars | 4 cars | VMT |
| :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- |
| 1 car | 2.00 | 10.34 | 10.24 | 10.57 | 0.73 |
| 2 cars | 10.34 | 58.26 | 61.44 | 61.57 | 4.46 |
| 3 cars | 10.24 | 61.44 | 68.64 | 67.11 | 5.21 |
| 4 cars | 10.57 | 61.57 | 67.11 | 66.34 | 5.00 |
| VMT | -0.73 | 4.46 | 5.21 | 5.00 | 1.25 |

mileage traveled. It appears that results related to vehicle holding are consistent between the ordered and the unordered structures. The effects are very limited in all the cases considered, but in general slightly higher for the ordered model.

Increases in income and density result into slightly more households with 0 and 1 car, and fewer households with 2,3 , and $4+$ cars. With reference to income, we calculate that a 10 percent increase in income will result into higher vehicle ownership of about $1.5 \%$ and $4.0 \%$ according respectively to the unordered and ordered model. These values are lower than those provided by Litman Lit13, who indicate an average elasticity of vehicle ownership to income of 1.0, but close to the 0.4 calculated by Goodwin et al. GDH04.

The effect of built environment variables (i.e. density) on vehicle ownership has been studied recently by different authors in transportation and economics and it is interesting to compare our results with those obtained in previous studies. In particular, Fang Fan80 found from a model calibrated on 2001 data and relative

Table 3.6: Covariance Matrix, Model 3, Ordered DC

|  | \#cars | VMT |
| :--- | :--- | :--- |
| \#cars | 1.00 | 0.50 |
| VMT | 0.50 | 1.56 |

Table 3.7: Covariance Matrix, Model 2, Genz (no logsum)

|  | 1 car | 2 cars | 3 cars | 4 cars | VMT |
| :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- |
| 1 car | 2.00 | 3.31 | 3.95 | 3.43 | 1.48 |
| 2 cars | 3.31 | 12.89 | 5.69 | 4.64 | 2.38 |
| 3 cars | 3.95 | 5.69 | 11.67 | 12.19 | 3.43 |
| 4 cars | 3.43 | 4.64 | 12.19 | 36.93 | 4.56 |
| VMT | 1.48 | 2.38 | 3.43 | 4.56 | 1.24 |

to California that a 50 percent increase in density causes a reduction of 1.2 percent in truck holdings, a larger truck VMT reduction (about 8 percent) and a small car VMT change (- 1.32 percent). Bento et al. BCMV05 calculate a density elasticity of 0.1. These values compares pretty well with what found in our study which gives a reduction of 1.5 percent in vehicle holdings, a reduction of 5.6 percent in vehicle use and an elasticity of VMT to density equal to 0.11 .

Driving cost change has almost no effects on vehicle holding decisions but has a significant effect on car travel demand. Our model predicts that 50 percent increase in fuel cost produces a reduction of 17.7 percent in VMT for the unordered model and about 20 percent for the ordered model. The elasticity of vehicle travel with respect to fuel prices is 0.35 for the unordered model and 0.4 for the ordered model. These values are higher than the average values of 0.3 provided in the literature Lit13] and found in a number of other studies (TRACE, TRA99], but close to the value of 0.34 calculated using data from 1968 to 2008 by Li et al. LLM11.

Table 3.8: Sensitivity Scenarios

| variable | income | density | driving cost |
| :--- | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $\%$ change | -10 | -50 | -50 |
|  | -5 | -25 | -25 |
|  | 5 | 25 | 25 |
|  | 10 | 50 | 50 |

### 3.6 Conclusions

The proposed unordered modeling structure is able to account for full correlation among simultaneous decisions and among the discrete alternatives. This approach overcomes the limitation of existing models by eliminating the hypotheses of fixed budget for the continuous variable and of independence from irrelevant alternatives. The use of numerical methods for the computation of the multivariate normal probabilities has been introduced for the first time in an econometric context and successfully applied to estimate model formulations that include both discrete and continuous dependent variables. This approach is a valid alternative to Monte Carlo simulation, especially in cases when the problem can be modeled just with nominal variables. We have also estimated an ordered response model; although previous literature has shown that ordinal variable vehicle ownership models are inferior to the nominal variable approach in the context of joint discrete-continuous models they might represent an attractive option due to their closed form mathematical formulation.

Empirical results although consistent with previous literature provide a number of interesting insights for policy analysis. The unordered discrete-continuous model always performs better in terms of goodness of fit statistics when compared
to ordered discrete-continuous models. However, the two structures have very similar elasticity values, with the ordered model showing slightly higher elasticities in the discrete part with respect to income and density, and to fuel cost in the continuous part. By using data from 2009 a relatively high elasticity value for fuel cost (about 0.36 ) is derived, which might be due to the high fuel cost experienced by drivers at that time and to the economic crisis that affected the United States after 2008. We have also experienced difficulty in estimating the logsum variable in the ordered model. Although we do not fully know the reasons for this problem, the impossibility of accounting for the utility deriving from the choice of vehicle type and vintage represents another important limitation of the model based on ordered probit in the context of vehicle ownership modeling.

The proposed models are highly flexible and can be transferred to other integrated decisions that are relevant in transportation and related disciplines (i.e. number of daily activities and time dedicated to each activity, mode choice and departure time; types of car owned and mileage traveled for each type).

Table 3.9: Application Results

| Corresponding change | Change in residential density |  |  |  |  | Change in driving cost |  |  |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
|  | 0car | 1 car | 2 cars | 3 cars | 4 cars | Average veh. ownership |  | miles |  |
| Actual | 7.22\% | 22.59\% | 46.82\% | 17.92\% | 5.45\% | 1.92 |  | 22,490 |  |
| Unordered DC |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |
| Income - 10\% | 7.20\% | 24.52\% | 45.93\% | 16.92\% | 5.44\% | 1.89 | -1.51\% | 20,829 | -7.39\% |
| Income -5\% | 7.22\% | 23.49\% | 46.39\% | 17.46\% | 5.45\% | 1.90 | -0.71\% | 21,666 | -3.67\% |
| Income $+5 \%$ | 7.22\% | 21.75\% | 47.18\% | 18.39\% | 5.46\% | 1.93 | -0.70\% | 23,310 | 3.65\% |
| Income $+10 \%$ | 7.25\% | 20.70\% | 47.71\% | 18.88\% | 5.47\% | 1.95 | 1.48\% | 24,151 | 7.38\% |
| Density -50\% | 7.24\% | 20.10\% | 47.99\% | 19.20\% | 5.46\% | 1.96 | 1.96\% | 23,730 | 5.51\% |
| Density - $25 \%$ | 7.25\% | 21.38\% | 47.42\% | 18.49\% | 5.46\% | 1.94 | 0.91\% | 23,080 | 2.62\% |
| Density + $25 \%$ | 7.12\% | 23.79\% | 46.21\% | 17.43\% | 5.45\% | 1.90 | -0.77\% | 21,850 | -2.85\% |
| Density $+50 \%$ | 6.97\% | 24.91\% | 45.82\% | 16.86\% | 5.45\% | 1.89 | -1.51\% | 21,231 | -5.60\% |
| Fuel cost -50\% | 7.22\% | 22.58\% | 46.86\% | 17.89\% | 5.45\% | 1.92 | -0.01\% | 26,479 | 17.74\% |
| Fuel cost -25\% | 7.23\% | 22.54\% | 46.81\% | 17.95\% | 5.47\% | 1.92 | -0.05\% | 24,501 | 8.94\% |
| Fuel cost $+25 \%$ | 7.23\% | 22.56\% | 46.74\% | 18.02\% | 5.45\% | 1.92 | 0.05\% | 20,489 | -8.90\% |
| Fuel cost $+50 \%$ | 7.22\% | 22.54\% | 46.84\% | 17.94\% | $5.46 \%$ | 1.92 | 0.05\% | 18,501 | -17.74\% |
| Ordered DC |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |
| Income -10\% | 7.66\% | 27.50\% | 44.10\% | 15.98\% | 4.76\% | 1.83 | -4.23\% | 20,802 | -7.76\% |
| Income -5\% | 7.36\% | 26.23\% | 44.04\% | 17.01\% | 5.36\% | 1.87 | -2.08\% | 21,708 | -3.74\% |
| Income $+5 \%$ | 6.77\% | 24.09\% | 43.58\% | 18.83\% | 6.73\% | 1.95 | 2.06\% | 23,426 | 3.87\% |
| Income $+10 \%$ | 6.50\% | 23.21\% | 43.02\% | 19.78\% | 7.50\% | 1.99 | 4.09\% | 24,333 | 7.90\% |
| Density -50\% | 5.03\% | 24.53\% | 45.05\% | 18.88\% | 6.51\% | 1.97 | 3.44\% | 23,857 | 5.78\% |
| Density - $25 \%$ | 6.00\% | 24.92\% | 44.39\% | 18.40\% | 6.29\% | 1.94 | 1.74\% | 23,214 | 2.94\% |
| Density $+25 \%$ | 8.11\% | 25.37\% | 43.28\% | 17.43\% | 5.80\% | 1.87 | -1.73\% | 21,904 | -2.87\% |
| Density $+50 \%$ | 9.07\% | 25.49\% | 42.78\% | 17.02\% | 5.64\% | 1.85 | -3.18\% | 21,278 | -5.65\% |
| Fuel cost -50\% | 7.02\% | 25.22\% | 43.85\% | 17.89\% | 6.02\% | 1.91 | -0.04\% | 27,030 | 19.85\% |
| Fuel cost -25\% | 7.01\% | 25.23\% | 43.85\% | 17.87\% | 6.04\% | 1.91 | -0.03\% | 24,801 | 9.97\% |
| Fuel cost $+25 \%$ | 7.03\% | 25.29\% | 43.78\% | 17.87\% | 6.03\% | 1.91 | -0.08\% | 20,322 | -9,89\% |
| Fuel cost $+50 \%$ | 7.05\% | 25.23\% | 43.83\% | 17.94\% | 5.96\% | 1.91 | -0.11\% | 18,087 | -19.80\% |

## Chapter 4: Validation of Discrete-Continuous Models

### 4.1 Introduction

In this chapter, ordered discrete-continuous (ODC) and unordered discretecontinuous (UDC) models are validated using both simulated and real data. In both cases, validation is carried out on holdout samples. The real data is relative to the car ownership and use problem and are calibrated on the 2009 NHTS data.

### 4.2 Simulated data: ordered discrete-continuous (ODC) model

### 4.2.1 ODC Data generation

For this simulated case, we generate 2,000 observations and we assume that each synthetic individual has a choice across 4 discrete alternatives. By design, the dependent variables are marginally distributed according respectively to an ordered probit and a regression model. We are using 10 predictors $\mathrm{X}_{1}$ through $\mathrm{X}_{10}$, all assumed to follow a standard normal distribution. Two datasets are generated. The first assumes that low correlation exists between the error terms of the discrete and the continuous models ( $\rho=0.1$ ); while the second assumes high correlation between the error terms $(\rho=0.9)$. For both cases, the predictors of the ordered
probit are const, $\mathrm{X}_{1}, \mathrm{X}_{2}, \mathrm{X}_{3}, \mathrm{X}_{4}$ and $\mathrm{X}_{5}$ with coefficients (1,1,-1, 0.5, 0.5, 2); while the predictors of the regression are const, $\mathrm{X}_{6}, \mathrm{X}_{7}, \mathrm{X}_{8}, \mathrm{X}_{9}$ and $\mathrm{X}_{10}$ with coefficients $(-1,1,1,1,2,-2)$. The model intercepts are denoted by const and the variance of the regression is $\sigma^{2}=25$. The models differ only in the correlation value. The cutpoints of the ordered probit are set to $\Gamma=(1,2)$, such that the differences between them are $\alpha=(1,1)$. The model is estimated on 1,600 observations and applied to the remaining 400 observations in the sample.

### 4.2.2 ODC validation results: low correlation

Results relative to the validation of the ordered discrete-continuous model with low correlation $(\rho=0.1)$ are presented in figures 4.1 through 4.6. Table 4.1 summarizes the predicted probability of the observed choice in the validation sample for the following cases: 1) joint ordered discrete-continuous model; 2) ordered probit model and regression; 3) ordered probit only. Not surprisingly all summary statistics are within a narrow range and the joint model does approximately as good as the separate models and the ordered probit model alone. The log-likelihood in the validation sample is approximately the same for all the three models considered.

Figure 4.1 shows how the three models compare with market shares in terms of predictions. In all cases, bigger market shares are associated with bigger predicted probabilities. The circles (joint model), triangles (separate model), and crosses (discrete) are all located at approximately the same height on a vertical scale, meaning that none of them generates better predictions for any alternative.

In Figure 4.2 the probabilities are plotted against their ordered probit counterpart. Since there is almost no correlation between the error terms, both the circles (joint model) and the triangles (separate model) are approximately distributed along the identity line. This is to be expected since the small correlation induces noise in the predictions of the two models.

Predicted values for the regression are not very relevant in the context of a joint model because our model formulation uses the error of the continuous part to improve the prediction of the discrete part. There will be large differences in the predicted values only if the joint model optimizes the regression coefficient in such a way to improve the overall fit, but they cannot benefit directly from the conditioning in our scheme. If we were to report the predicted probability of the discrete model and then use this information to adjust the predicted value of the regression, we might be able to see an improvement in the regression fit. However, as discussed in previous chapters the conditioning is a difficult task.

Figure 4.3 shows the predicted values for the validation sample. It is worth noting that the apparent poor fit is due to the high variance of the residuals and no modeling approach can fix it. The coefficients of the models are given in tables 4.2 through 4.6. Not surprisingly, we are able to recover the true value of the coefficients in all cases, that is typically the case for a sample generated following the true model.

Table 4.1: ODC Validation $-\rho=0.1$

| model | min. | $1^{\text {st }} \mathrm{q}$. | median | mean | $3^{\text {rd }} \mathrm{q}$. | max. | Log-likelihood |
| :--- | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| joint ODC | 0.003 | 0.328 | 0.580 | 0.603 | 0.949 | 1.000 | -283.346 |
| separate ODC | 0.0026 | 0.326 | 0.588 | 0.601 | 0.946 | 1.000 | -286.116 |
| just OP | 0.003 | 0.322 | 0.590 | 0.602 | 0.948 | 1.000 | -286.287 |

Figure 4.1: Simulated ODC, $\rho=0.1$ - Comp. with Market Shares


Figure 4.2: Simulated ODC, $\rho=0.1$ - Comp. with OP


Figure 4.3: Simulated ODC, $\rho=0.1$ - Regression


* just regression * discrete-continuous

Table 4.2: Simulated ODC, $\rho=0.1$ - ODC coefficients for validation sample

| name | true param. | estimate | SD | t | p |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| const | 1 | 0.983 | 0.054 | 18.196 | 0.000 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{1}$ | 1 | 0.975 | 0.046 | 21.026 | 0.000 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{2}$ | -1 | -0.993 | 0.045 | -21.881 | 0.000 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{3}$ | 0.5 | 0.405 | 0.037 | 10.802 | 0.000 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{4}$ | 0.5 | 0.512 | 0.038 | 13.498 | 0.000 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{5}$ | 2 | 2.017 | 0.069 | 29.287 | 0.000 |
| $\alpha_{1}$ | 1 | 0.966 | 0.058 | 16.678 | 0.000 |
| $\alpha_{2}$ | 1 | 1.048 | 0.059 | 17.686 | 0.000 |
| const $^{\mathrm{X}_{6}}$ | -1 | -0.938 | 0.123 | -7.610 | 0.000 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{7}$ | 1 | 0.875 | 0.124 | 7.084 | 0.000 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{8}$ | 1 | 0.981 | 0.124 | 7.916 | 0.000 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{9}$ | 2 | 1.117 | 0.123 | 9.048 | 0.000 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{10}$ | -2 | 2.128 | 0.119 | 17.915 | 0.000 |
| $\sigma^{2}$ | 25 | -2.070 | 0.120 | -17.251 | 0.000 |
| $\rho$ | 0.1 | 24.242 | 0.856 | 28.323 | 0.000 |
| maxLL |  | -5868.34 |  |  |  |
| n |  | 1600 |  |  |  |

Table 4.4: Simulated ODC, $\rho=0.1$ - OP coefficients for validation sample

| name | true param. | estimate | SD | t | p |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| const | 1 | 0.991 | 0.054 | 18.314 | 0.000 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{1}$ | 1 | 0.982 | 0.046 | 21.139 | 0.000 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{2}$ | -1 | -0.996 | 0.046 | -21.845 | 0.000 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{3}$ | 0.5 | 0.401 | 0.038 | 10.650 | 0.000 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{4}$ | 0.5 | 0.515 | 0.038 | 13.498 | 0.000 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{5}$ | 2 | 2.024 | 0.069 | 29.355 | 0.000 |
| $\alpha_{1}$ | 1 | 0.969 | 0.058 | 16.707 | 0.000 |
| $\alpha_{2}$ | 1 | 1.043 | 0.059 | 17.680 | 0.000 |
| maxLL |  | -1047.853 |  |  |  |
| n |  | 1600 |  |  |  |

Table 4.6: Simulated ODC, $\rho=0.1$ - Regression coefficients for validation sample

| name | true param. | estimate | SD | t | p |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| const | -1 | -0.926 | 0.124 | -7.493 | 0.000 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{6}$ | 1 | 0.867 | 0.124 | 6.994 | 0.000 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{7}$ | 1 | 0.989 | 0.124 | 7.952 | 0.000 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{8}$ | 1 | 1.115 | 0.124 | 9.001 | 0.000 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{9}$ | 2 | 2.126 | 0.119 | 17.835 | 0.000 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{10}$ | -2 | -2.060 | 0.120 | -17.106 | 0.000 |
| sigma | 5 | 4.936 |  |  |  |
| adj R2 |  | 0.346 |  |  |  |
| n |  | 1600 |  |  |  |

### 4.2.3 ODC validation results: high correlation

All the results for the ordered discrete-continuous model with high correlation $(\rho=0.9)$ are presented in figures 4.8 through 4.13 . Table 4.8 reports the summary of predicted probabilities in the validation sample. Except for the minimum and maximum predicted probabilities that are almost zero and one for all three approaches, the quartiles, mean and log-likelihood of the joint model are greatly improved.

Figures 4.4 and 4.2 report predicted probabilities against market shares of ordered probit. As expected all three methods defeat market share predictions. The impact of the high correlation is shown in figure 4.2. The circles denote the conditional probabilities and the triangles the unconditional probabilities. The triangles are distributed along the identity line, meaning that the unconditional probabilities are about the same than their equivalent using just an ordered probit model. The circles are mostly high above the identity line, meaning that the joint model does much better than the ordered probit. Some circles are however, below the identity line meaning that conditioning worsens the predictions for these observations. It appears that while the discrete-continuous model improves the predictions when there is sufficient correlation between error terms, this improvement is never uniform such that there are always units that have a worse conditional prediction.

The model's coefficients are reported in tables 4.9 through 4.13. It is worth noting is that the model estimates are not always close to the true values. It is hard to explain why this happens, but we think that it may have to do with the very high correlation that might affect the identification of the model.

Table 4.8: ODC Validation $-\rho=0.9$

| model | min. | $1^{\text {st }}$ q. | median | mean | $3^{\text {rd }}$ q. | max. | Log-likelihood |
| :--- | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| joint ODC | 0.036 | 0.635 | 0.911 | 0.785 | 1.000 | 1.000 | -134.535 |
| separate ODC | 0.020 | 0.307 | 0.577 | 0.591 | 0.935 | 1.000 | -293.999 |
| just OP | 0.009 | 0.334 | 0.562 | 0.600 | 0.957 | 1.000 | -296.4021 |

Table 4.9: Simulated ODC, $\rho=0.9$ - ODC coefficients for validation sample

| name | true param. | estimate | SD | t | p |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| const | 1 | 0.846 | 0.041 | 20.874 | 0.000 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{1}$ | 1 | 0.871 | 0.026 | 33.201 | 0.000 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{2}$ | -1 | -0.845 | 0.026 | -32.453 | 0.000 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{3}$ | 0.5 | 0.450 | 0.021 | 21.321 | 0.000 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{4}$ | 0.5 | 0.423 | 0.020 | 21.132 | 0.000 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{5}$ | 2 | 1.785 | 0.046 | 38.741 | 0.000 |
| $\alpha_{1}$ | 1 | 0.833 | 0.043 | 19.284 | 0.000 |
| $\alpha_{2}$ | 1 | 0.896 | 0.043 | 20.693 | 0.000 |
| const | -1 | -1.092 | 0.125 | -8.741 | 0.000 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{6}$ | 1 | 0.979 | 0.083 | 11.795 | 0.000 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{7}$ | 1 | 1.062 | 0.084 | 12.634 | 0.000 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{8}$ | 1 | 0.962 | 0.083 | 11.540 | 0.000 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{9}$ | 2 | 1.884 | 0.082 | 22.983 | 0.000 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{10}$ | -2 | -2.023 | 0.080 | -25.316 | 0.000 |
| $\sigma^{2}$ | 25 | 24.950 | 0.890 | 28.038 | 0.000 |
| $\rho$ | 0.9 | 0.786 | 0.009 | 86.762 | 0.000 |
| maxLL |  | -5354.587 |  |  |  |
| n |  | 1600.000 |  |  |  |

Table 4.11: Simulated ODC, $\rho=0.9$ - OP coefficients for validation sample

| name | true param. | estimate | SD | t | p |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| const | 1 | 1.021 | 0.055 | 18.596 | 0.000 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{1}$ | 1 | 0.954 | 0.046 | 20.972 | 0.000 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{2}$ | -1 | -0.970 | 0.045 | -21.463 | 0.000 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{3}$ | 0.5 | 0.572 | 0.040 | 14.418 | 0.000 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{4}$ | 0.5 | 0.508 | 0.039 | 13.146 | 0.000 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{5}$ | 2 | 2.083 | 0.071 | 29.298 | 0.000 |
| $\alpha_{1}$ | 1 | 0.992 | 0.060 | 16.604 | 0.000 |
| $\alpha_{2}$ | 1 | 1.076 | 0.061 | 17.773 | 0.000 |
| $\operatorname{maxLL}$ |  | -1035.574 |  |  |  |
| n |  | 1600 |  |  |  |

Figure 4.4: Simulated ODC, $\rho=0.9$ - Comp. with Market Shares


$$
\circ \text { joint } \Delta \text { sep }+ \text { disc } \bullet 1 \text { alt } \bullet 2 \text { alt } \bullet 3 \text { alt } \bullet 4 \text { alt }
$$

Table 4.13: Simulated ODC, $\rho=0.9$ - Regression coefficients for validation sample

| name | true param. | estimate | SD | t | p |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| const | -1 | -1.057 | 0.125 | -8.492 | 0.000 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{6}$ | 1 | 1.107 | 0.125 | 8.866 | 0.000 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{7}$ | 1 | 1.066 | 0.125 | 8.510 | 0.000 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{8}$ | 1 | 0.960 | 0.125 | 7.696 | 0.000 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{9}$ | 2 | 1.931 | 0.120 | 16.088 | 0.000 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{10}$ | -2 | -2.089 | 0.121 | -17.225 | 0.000 |
| sigma | 5 | 4.971 |  |  |  |
| adj R2 |  | 0.340 |  |  |  |
| n |  | 1600 |  |  |  |

Figure 4.5: Simulated ODC, $\rho=0.9$ - Comp. with OP


Figure 4.6: Simulated ODC, $\rho=0.9$ - Regression


```
* just regression * discrete-continuous
```


### 4.3 Simulated data: unordered discrete-continuous (UDC) model validation

### 4.3.1 UDC data generation

For the validation of the unordered discrete-continuous model, we are using a similar procedure. The four utility functions are defined as follows:

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \mathrm{U}_{0}=\quad \mathrm{X}_{1}-\mathrm{X}_{2}+\epsilon_{0} \\
& \mathrm{U}_{1}=0.5+2 \mathrm{X}_{3}-2 \mathrm{X}_{4}+\epsilon_{1} \\
& \mathrm{U}_{2}=-0.5-2 \mathrm{X}_{5}+2 \mathrm{X}_{6}+\epsilon_{2} \\
& \mathrm{U}_{3}=1-\mathrm{X}_{7}+\mathrm{X}_{8}+\epsilon_{3}
\end{aligned}
$$

The continuous part is set to be:

$$
\mathrm{Y}_{\mathrm{r}}=1+\mathrm{X}_{9}-\mathrm{X}_{10}+2 \mathrm{X}_{1}-0.5 \mathrm{X}_{2}+\epsilon_{\mathrm{r}}
$$

We are considering a case with low correlation, and a case with high correlation. The Cholesky matrix ( L ) of the covariances $(\mathrm{S})$ is reported because this is what is being optimized in the log-likelihood method. We refer to the joint covariance of differences in utilities and regression residuals. In our case, the first three rows correspond to differences in utilities with respect to the $0^{\text {th }}$ alternative $\left(\mathrm{U}_{0}\right)$ and the last row corresponds to the covariance terms between the regression and these differences.

$$
\mathrm{S}_{\mathrm{low}}=\left(\begin{array}{cccc}
1 & 0.25 & 0 & -0.2 \\
0.25 & 1.0625 & 0.25 & -0.05 \\
0 & 0.25 & 1.0625 & 0.2 \\
-0.2 & -0.05 & 0.2 & 1.08
\end{array}\right)
$$

$$
\begin{gathered}
\mathrm{L}_{\text {low }}=\left(\begin{array}{cccc}
1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0.25 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0.25 & 1 & 0 \\
-0.2 & 0 & 0.2 & 1
\end{array}\right) \\
\mathrm{S}_{\text {high }}=\left(\begin{array}{cccc}
1 & 0.8 & -0.3 & -0.6 \\
0.8 & 1 & 0.24 & -0.48 \\
-0.3 & 0.24 & 0.98 & 0.48 \\
-0.6 & -0.48 & 0.48 & 1.08
\end{array}\right) \\
\mathrm{L}_{\text {high }}
\end{gathered} \mathrm{c}_{\mathrm{c}}=\left(\begin{array}{cccc}
1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0.8 & 0.6 & 0 & 0 \\
-0.3 & 0.8 & 0.5 & 0 \\
-0.6 & 0 & 0.6 & 0.6
\end{array}\right), ~ 又
$$

### 4.3.2 UDC validation results: low correlation

The results for the unordered discrete-continuous model are presented in the same way than for the ordered model. Figures 4.15 through 4.20 represent the results obtained for the model with low correlations.

Table 4.15 shows the distribution of predicted probabilities for the joint and unconditional model, as well as for the probit model alone. Although the correlation is "low", it is still higher than for the low correlation of the ordered joint model. We can observe that the mean and quartiles of the joint model are slightly higher
than their unconditional counterpart. Interestingly enough, the median is increased more than the mean and we think that this is due to the observation we made earlier that conditioning actually reduces the predicted probability of some choices. On the other side, the median is a very robust measure of location and is much less affected by this problem.

Figures 4.7 and 4.8 show the predicted probabilities. Again the model outperforms the market share approach. Here the model is more complex because the regression is correlated differently depending on the alternatives. The green circles are closer to the identity line than the circles of other colors. This is likely due to the fact that the regression is less correlated to the third alternative (second column in covariance matrix) than to the other ones with a covariance of -0.05 versus -0.2 and 0.2. Again, the triangles of unconditional probabilities are distributed along the identity line because no information from the correlation is accounted for in their calculation.

Figure 4.9 shows the predicted continuous variable. Just like for the ordered model, we do not use any conditioning information for the regression prediction and we do not expect significant differences for these predictions. The fit appears to be better than for the joint ordered example but this is only due to the smaller variance of the residuals (1.08 versus 25).

Coefficients are reported in tables 4.16 through 4.20. The most interesting information in these tables lie in the difference between the discrete-continuous model coefficients and the probit coefficients. The joint model appears to suffer from some bias that is not present in the probit.

Table 4.15: UDC Validation - low correlations

| model | min. | $1^{\text {st }} \mathrm{q}$. | median | mean | $3^{\text {rd }} \mathrm{q}$. | max. | Log-likelihood |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| joint UDC | 0.012 | 0.569 | 0.841 | 0.738 | 0.960 | 1.000 | -176.360 |
| separate UDC | 0.011 | 0.548 | 0.808 | 0.722 | 0.939 | 1.000 | -180.794 |
| just Probit | 0.007 | 0.553 | 0.821 | 0.729 | 0.953 | 1.000 | -179.815 |

Figure 4.7: Simulated UDC, low correlations - Comp. with Market Shares

o joint $\Delta$ sep + disc $\bullet 1$ alt $\bullet 2$ alt $\bullet 3$ alt $\bullet 4$ alt

Figure 4.8: Simulated UDC, low correlations - Comp. with OP


Figure 4.9: Simulated UDC, low correlations - Regression


```
* just regression * discrete-continuous
```

Table 4.16: Simulated UDC, low correlations - UDC coefficients for validation sample

| name | true param. | estimate |
| :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $\mathrm{X}_{1}$ | 1.0000 | 1.2233 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{2}$ | -1.0000 | -1.1565 |
| const | 0.5000 | 0.7500 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{3}$ | 2.0000 | 2.0494 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{4}$ | -2.0000 | -2.1669 |
| const | -0.5000 | -0.6279 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{5}$ | -2.0000 | -2.3091 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{6}$ | 2.0000 | 2.2953 |
| const $^{2}$ | 1.0000 | 1.1714 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{7}$ | -1.0000 | -1.0469 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{8}$ | 1.0000 | 1.1616 |
| const $^{2}$ | -1.0000 | -1.0013 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{9}$ | 1.0000 | 1.0057 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{10}$ | -1.0000 | -0.9749 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{1}$ | 2.0000 | 1.9979 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{2}$ | -0.5000 | -0.4525 |
| $\mathrm{~L}_{21}$ | 0.2500 | 0.0207 |
| $\mathrm{~L}_{22}$ | 1.0625 | 1.2756 |
| $\mathrm{~L}_{31}$ | 0.0000 | 0.0755 |
| $\mathrm{~L}_{32}$ | 0.2500 | 0.4824 |
| $\mathrm{~L}_{33}$ | 1.0625 | 1.0786 |
| $\mathrm{~L}_{41}$ | -0.2000 | -0.1953 |
| $\mathrm{~L}_{42}$ | -0.0500 | 0.0744 |
| $\mathrm{~L}_{43}$ | 0.2000 | 0.2825 |
| $\mathrm{~L}_{44}$ | 1.0800 | 0.9938 |
| maxLL |  | -3099.2520 |
| n |  | 1600.0000 |

Table 4.18: Simulated UDC, low correlation - Probit coefficients for validation sample

| name | true param. | estimate |
| :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $\mathrm{X}_{1}$ | 1.0000 | 1.0383 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{2}$ | -1.0000 | -0.9861 |
| const | 0.5000 | 0.5816 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{3}$ | 2.0000 | 1.8296 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{4}$ | -2.0000 | -1.9304 |
| const | -0.5000 | -0.5360 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{5}$ | -2.0000 | -1.9665 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{6}$ | 2.0000 | 1.9608 |
| const | 1.0000 | 0.9898 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{7}$ | -1.0000 | -0.8733 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{8}$ | 1.0000 | 0.9891 |
| $\mathrm{~L}_{21}$ | 0.2500 | 0.0492 |
| $\mathrm{~L}_{22}$ | 1.0625 | 1.0421 |
| $\mathrm{~L}_{31}$ | 0.0000 | 0.0578 |
| $\mathrm{~L}_{32}$ | 0.2500 | 0.3195 |
| $\mathrm{~L}_{33}$ | 1.0625 | 0.9091 |
| maxLL |  | -768.8513 |
| n |  | 1600.0000 |

Table 4.20: Simulated UDC, low correlation - Regression coefficients for validation sample

| name | true param. | estimate | SD | t | p |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| const | -1.0000 | -0.9862 | 0.0264 | -37.4100 | 0.000 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{9}$ | 1.0000 | 0.9979 | 0.0255 | 39.1600 | 0.000 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{10}$ | -1.0000 | -0.9704 | 0.0257 | -37.7300 | 0.000 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{1}$ | 2.0000 | 1.9969 | 0.0270 | 74.1000 | 0.000 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{2}$ | -0.5000 | -0.4651 | 0.0262 | -17.7800 | 0.000 |
| sigma | 1.0400 | 1.0540 |  |  |  |
| adj R2 |  | 0.8696 |  |  |  |
| n |  | 1600.0000 |  |  |  |

### 4.3.3 UDC validation results: high correlation

Figures 4.22 through 4.27 report the validation results with high covariance elements. Figure 4.22 summarizes the predicted probabilities. This time, all quartiles and the mean are significantly higher for the joint model. The validation log-likelihood is also much higher (-144 vs -204). However, the log-likelihood for the unconditional discrete-continuous model is lower than the log-likelihood of probit alone. We think that the model estimation may be somehow shifted in the context of a discrete-continuous model. This may be related to the apparent bias is the estimation of the coefficient for the joint model, that we do not observe for the probit alone. Tables 4.23 and 4.25 tend to confirm this hypothesis since the probit coefficients are less biased than the corresponding coefficients of the discrete-continuous model. Also we note that the high correlation appears to increase this apparent bias. Again we suggest that the covariance structure might be weakening the model identification but this requires more research.

Figures 4.10 and 4.11 are basically a more extreme version of their low correlation equivalent. Unconditional probabilities represent by triangle are still distributed along the identity line. Conditional probabilities represented by circles are further from the identity. Most circles are above the line but some are under it.

Table 4.22: UDC Validation - high correlations

| model | min. | $1^{\text {st }}$ q. | median | mean | $3^{\text {rd }}$ q. | max. | Log-likelihood |
| :--- | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| joint UDC | 0.024 | 0.611 | 0.910 | 0.779 | 0.991 | 1.000 | -144.3271 |
| separate UDC | 0.000 | 0.531 | 0.825 | 0.716 | 0.958 | 1.000 | -204.4712 |
| just Probit | 0.001 | 0.531 | 0.840 | 0.725 | 0.964 | 1.000 | -192.7428 |

Figure 4.10: Simulated UDC, high correlations - Comp. with Market Shares


- joint $\Delta$ sep + disc $\bullet 1$ alt $\bullet 2$ alt $\bullet 3$ alt $\bullet 4$ alt

Figure 4.11: Simulated UDC, high correlations - Comp. with OP


Figure 4.12: Simulated UDC, high correlations - Regression


```
* just regression * discrete-continuous
```

Table 4.23: Simulated UDC, high correlations - UDC coefficients for validation sample

| name | true param. | estimate |
| :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $\mathrm{X}_{1}$ | 1.0000 | 1.3416 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{2}$ | -1.0000 | -1.2953 |
| const | 0.5000 | 0.9029 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{3}$ | 2.0000 | 2.4853 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{4}$ | -2.0000 | -2.3999 |
| const | -0.5000 | -0.7895 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{5}$ | -2.0000 | -2.7010 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{6}$ | 2.0000 | 2.6898 |
| const $^{2}$ | 1.0000 | 1.1432 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{7}$ | -1.0000 | -1.4073 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{8}$ | 1.0000 | 1.5180 |
| const $^{2}$ | -1.0000 | -1.0078 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{9}$ | 1.0000 | 1.0315 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{10}$ | -1.0000 | -1.0001 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{1}$ | 2.0000 | 2.0515 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{2}$ | -0.5000 | -0.4667 |
| $\mathrm{~L}_{21}$ | 0.8000 | 0.9875 |
| $\mathrm{~L}_{22}$ | 1.0000 | 0.7871 |
| $\mathrm{~L}_{31}$ | -0.3000 | -0.2956 |
| $\mathrm{~L}_{32}$ | 0.2400 | 0.8750 |
| $\mathrm{~L}_{33}$ | 0.9800 | 1.1284 |
| $\mathrm{~L}_{41}$ | -0.6000 | -0.6742 |
| $\mathrm{~L}_{42}$ | -0.4800 | -0.0443 |
| $\mathrm{~L}_{43}$ | 0.4800 | 0.3976 |
| $\mathrm{~L}_{44}$ | 1.0800 | 0.7264 |
| maxLL |  | -2949.9730 |
| n |  | 1600.0000 |

Table 4.25: Simulated UDC, high correlation - Probit coefficients for validation sample

| name | true param. | estimate |
| :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $\mathrm{X}_{1}$ | 1.0000 | 1.1703 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{2}$ | -1.0000 | -1.0785 |
| const | 0.5000 | 0.7951 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{3}$ | 2.0000 | 2.1475 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{4}$ | -2.0000 | -2.0838 |
| const | -0.5000 | -0.7265 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{5}$ | -2.0000 | -2.3638 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{6}$ | 2.0000 | 2.4109 |
| const | 1.0000 | 1.0276 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{7}$ | -1.0000 | -1.1679 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{8}$ | 1.0000 | 1.2878 |
| $\mathrm{~L}_{21}$ | 0.2500 | 1.0586 |
| $\mathrm{~L}_{22}$ | 1.0625 | 0.6719 |
| $\mathrm{~L}_{31}$ | 0.0000 | -0.2334 |
| $\mathrm{~L}_{32}$ | 0.2500 | 1.0792 |
| $\mathrm{~L}_{33}$ | 1.0625 | 0.5383 |
| maxLL |  | -691.1823 |
| n |  | 1600.0000 |

Table 4.27: Simulated UDC, high correlation - Regression coefficients for validation sample

| name | true param. | estimate | SD | t | p |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| const | -1.0000 | -1.0111 | 0.0268 | -37.6900 | 0.000 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{9}$ | 1.0000 | 1.0112 | 0.0259 | 39.0000 | 0.000 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{10}$ | -1.0000 | -0.9996 | 0.0262 | -38.1800 | 0.000 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{1}$ | 2.0000 | 2.0660 | 0.0274 | 75.3400 | 0.000 |
| $\mathrm{X}_{2}$ | -0.5000 | -0.4514 | 0.0266 | -16.9600 | 0.000 |
| sigma | 1.0400 | 1.0720 |  |  |  |
| adj R2 |  | 0.8718 |  |  |  |
| n |  | 1600.0000 |  |  |  |

### 4.4 Real data: discrete-continuous model validation

Predicting a discrete variable can be done in several ways. It is not possible to assume that the chosen alternative is simply the alternative with the highest probability. To illustrate this, imagine that we want to predict if people will use their car or public transit for their daily commute to work. If the model were to assign a probability of using a car between $70 \%$ and $100 \%$ and, correspondingly, a probability between $0 \%$ and $30 \%$ of using public transit, then the most likely alternative would be "car" for $100 \%$ of observations. This result does not reflect the actual market share. Also, if we were to predict a rare choice, such as using a bicycle to commute to work, it may be important to identify who are the individuals that are the most likely to make this choice, even if every single decision maker still has a higher probability of not using a bicycle. For the reasons explained above the most used approach is sample enumeration, by which the choice probabilities of each decision maker in a sample are averaged over decision makers.

In a regular regression model, the dependent variable will have fitted values after the model has been calibrated. There are a number of issues that may affect the validity of these fitted values. For example model estimation, goodness of fit or model selection can be challenging. However, once these issues have been addressed, there will be a unique numerical fitted value for the dependent variable. In a regression we would use a F-test to test if the regression model is significantly better than simply using the mean of the dependent variable as a predictor. We argue that we can do a similar analysis by comparing the probabilities predicted by the
model with the sample market shares. If, for example, we have $80 \%$ of our sample who use their car and $20 \%$ who use public transit, then we want a model that will predict the transit alternative with a probability more than $20 \%$ for at least some observations. Otherwise the model is not more useful than just using market shares, and therefore the model is not useful.

In joint discrete-continuous models two two dependent variables, (one discrete and one continuous) are predicted simultaneously. The validation procedure suggested in our work suppose that if the probability of the chosen alternative as predicted by the joint model is higher than the one predicted by the regular model, then we conclude that the more complicated model is more useful, otherwise we should favor the simpler model.

### 4.4.1 Discrete-continuous car ownership model - NHTS 2009

The NHTS 2009 dataset has been divided into a calibration sample containing $80 \%$ of the total observations and a validation sample that has the remaining observations ( $20 \%$ of the total). Coefficients' estimates for the ODC model are reported in 4.30; the coefficients of the OP are in 4.32, and the predictor sif the regression in 4.34. We first perform a BIC variable selection for both the ODC and a separate ordered probit, and then we compute the predicted probability of the actual choice in the validation sample using three methods:

- Joint model using the regression for the conditional probability;
- Joint model ignoring the regression;
- Only the ordered probit.

Table 4.29 highlights some interesting results. First, the joint model slightly outperforms the regular model, as it predicts higher probabilities than the separate $\mathrm{DC} /$ regression and OP alone. The minimum and maximum predicted probabilities are practically zero and one for all three models. The three quartiles of predicted probabilities considered are higher for the conditional ODC model, but by just small quantities. For example the median predicted probability is $63 \%$, which is $5 \%$ more than the one obtained by using a regular ordered probit. The mean predicted probability is also higher by about $5 \%$.

In figure 4.13 we compare the predicted probabilities obtained with the ODC models to the market share; the line represents the identity line where predicted probabilities equals the market share. It is worth noting that each observation in the validation sample is reported three times in the figure; one for each model estimated (joint, sep, disc). Ideally, all points should be above the identity line, which will indicate that every choice is predicted better than with just the market share.

Figure 4.14 reports these predicted probabilities against the ones obtained by using just an ordered probit alone. The line is still the identity line. The ideal scenario would be to have predicted probabilities consistently above the identity line; in that case the predicted probability of the joint model would always be superior to the base model. However, as it can be seen from 4.14 this is not always the case.

Table 4.29: 2009- ODC

| model | min. | $1^{\text {st }}$ q. | median | mean | $3^{\text {rd }}$ q. | max. | Log-likelihood |
| :--- | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| joint ODC | 0.008 | 0.419 | 0.632 | 0.574 | 0.755 | 0.999 | -209.5722 |
| separate ODC | 0.004 | 0.365 | 0.557 | 0.506 | 0.643 | 0.998 | -239.648 |
| just OP | 0.001 | 0.362 | 0.585 | 0.527 | 0.695 | 0.999 | -238.669 |

Figure 4.13: ODC 2009 - Validation against market shares


- joint $\Delta$ sep + disc $\bullet 0$ cars -1 cars -2 cars $\bullet 3$ cars $\bullet 4$ cars

Figure 4.14: ODC 2009 - Validation against ordered Probit

$\square$

- Joint $\Delta$ Separate $\bullet 0$ cars $\bullet 1$ cars -2 cars $\bullet 3$ cars $\bullet 4$ cars

Figure 4.15: ODC 2009 - Validation of regression


* just regression * discrete-continuous

Table 4.30: 2009 NHTS - ODC coefficients

| name | estimate | SD | t | p |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| const | -1.734 | 0.283 | -6.125 | 0.000 |
| driver count | 0.885 | 0.089 | 9.952 | 0.000 |
| cost per mile | 15.018 | 1.095 | 13.709 | 0.000 |
| density | 0.000 | 0.000 | -11.787 | 0.000 |
| age | -0.002 | 0.003 | -0.829 | 0.407 |
| own home | 0.614 | 0.113 | 5.412 | 0.000 |
| income | 0.054 | 0.008 | 6.721 | 0.000 |
| num adults | 0.282 | 0.095 | 2.963 | 0.003 |
| transit | -0.368 | 0.137 | -2.679 | 0.007 |
| urban | -0.140 | 0.102 | -1.363 | 0.173 |
| gender | -0.141 | 0.061 | -2.313 | 0.021 |
| urban size | -0.019 | 0.021 | -0.885 | 0.376 |
| num workers | 0.056 | 0.051 | 1.101 | 0.271 |
| $\alpha_{1}$ | 2.503 | 0.160 | 15.616 | 0.000 |
| $\alpha_{2}$ | 1.871 | 0.075 | 25.052 | 0.000 |
| $\alpha_{3}$ | 1.246 | 0.077 | 16.098 | 0.000 |
| const | 1.522 | 0.320 | 4.756 | 0.000 |
| age | -0.018 | 0.004 | -5.239 | 0.000 |
| cost per mile | 0.196 | 1.067 | 0.183 | 0.855 |
| urban size | -0.076 | 0.028 | -2.746 | 0.006 |
| num workers | 0.221 | 0.069 | 3.216 | 0.001 |
| own home | 0.501 | 0.135 | 3.706 | 0.000 |
| density | 0.000 | 0.000 | -3.875 | 0.000 |
| income | 0.047 | 0.011 | 4.103 | 0.000 |
| urban | -0.232 | 0.137 | -1.697 | 0.090 |
| transit | -0.312 | 0.173 | -1.805 | 0.071 |
| num drivers | 0.730 | 0.108 | 6.785 | 0.000 |
| num adults | -0.033 | 0.120 | -0.277 | 0.782 |
| education | -0.064 | 0.039 | -1.623 | 0.105 |
| $\sigma^{2}$ | 2.090 | 0.087 | 23.962 | 0.000 |
| $\rho$ | 0.450 | 0.022 | 20.266 | 0.000 |
| max LL | -2836.070 |  |  |  |
| n | 1136.000 |  |  |  |
|  |  |  |  |  |

Table 4.32: 2009 NHTS - Ordered Probit coefficients

| name | estimate | SD | t | p |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| const | -1.662 | 0.319 | -5.219 | 0.000 |
| num drivers | 1.001 | 0.097 | 10.276 | 0.000 |
| density | 0.000 | 0.000 | -3.135 | 0.002 |
| cost per mile | 16.598 | 1.187 | 13.981 | 0.000 |
| income | 0.065 | 0.010 | 6.499 | 0.000 |
| own home | 0.706 | 0.125 | 5.628 | 0.000 |
| num adults | 0.275 | 0.106 | 2.606 | 0.009 |
| transit | -0.367 | 0.153 | -2.402 | 0.016 |
| urban | -0.159 | 0.112 | -1.415 | 0.157 |
| gender | -0.213 | 0.074 | -2.886 | 0.004 |
| age | -0.004 | 0.003 | -1.438 | 0.150 |
| education | -0.050 | 0.037 | -1.365 | 0.172 |
| density | 0.000 | 0.000 | -1.097 | 0.273 |
| urban size | -0.021 | 0.024 | -0.841 | 0.401 |
| num workers | 0.056 | 0.056 | 0.993 | 0.321 |
| $\alpha_{1}$ | 2.787 | 0.173 | 16.118 | 0.000 |
| $\alpha_{2}$ | 2.097 | 0.080 | 26.181 | 0.000 |
| $\alpha_{3}$ | 1.298 | 0.082 | 15.923 | 0.000 |
| max LL | -906.556 |  |  |  |
| n | 1136.000 |  |  |  |

Table 4.34: 2009 NHTS - Regression coefficients

| name | estimate | SD | t | p |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| driver count | 0.747 | 0.064 | 11.663 | 0.000 |
| density | 0.000 | 0.000 | -4.446 | 0.000 |
| income | 0.054 | 0.010 | 5.530 | 0.000 |
| num workers | 0.334 | 0.064 | 5.200 | 0.000 |
| urban size | -0.094 | 0.023 | -4.154 | 0.000 |
| own home | 0.422 | 0.118 | 3.564 | 0.000 |
| $\sigma$ | 1.477 |  |  |  |
| adj R2 | 0.744 |  |  |  |

The UDC version of this analysis does not favor joint models. First, table 4.36 illustrates that the probit model outperforms the joint model. This appears to be partly due to failed convergence in the estimation of the UDC. It is still the case however that conditional probabilities of the UDC are higher for all quartiles and for mean versus their unconditional counterpart.

Figures 4.16 and 4.18 provide more details about the predicted probabilities. Unfortunately, UDC predicted probabilities appear to be distributed at random, which is far from ideal. We can see that the green point that represent the 2 cars alternative are consistently under predicted by the joint model, which may indicate that the the component if this alternative's utility are either poorly estimated, or poorly specified. On the other side, the 1 and 4 cars alternative are still predicted better with the joint model, although it is not clear whether the circles, representing the conditional probabilities, offer a substantial improvement.

The coefficients used for this validation are reported in tables 4.37 through 4.40.

Table 4.36: 2009 - UDC

| model | min. | $1^{\text {st }}$ q. | median | mean | $3^{\text {rd }}$ q. | max. | Log-likelihood |
| :--- | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| joint UDC | 0.000 | 0.250 | 0.363 | 0.390 | 0.517 | 0.896 | -348.752 |
| separate UDC | 0.000 | 0.268 | 0.321 | 0.342 | 0.388 | 0.765 | -367.763 |
| just probit | 0.000 | 0.335 | 0.569 | 0.481 | 0.637 | 0.973 | -279.552 |

Figure 4.16: UDC 2009 - Validation against market share


Figure 4.17: UDC 2009 - Validation against Probit

$\square$

Figure 4.18: UDC 2009 - Validation of regression


```
* just regression * discrete-continuous
```

Table 4.37: 2009 NHTS - UDC coefficients

| name | estimate |
| :---: | :---: |
| const | 1.315 |
| income | 0.106 |
| num drivers | 0.302 |
| gender | -0.242 |
| urban size | -0.212 |
| density | 0.000 |
| const | -2.543 |
| income | 0.285 |
| num drivers | 2.449 |
| gender | 0.255 |
| urban size | -0.944 |
| density | 0.000 |
| const | -7.547 |
| income | 0.564 |
| num drivers | 2.536 |
| gender | -4.045 |
| urban size | -1.244 |
| density | 0.000 |
| const | -4.887 |
| income | 0.438 |
| num drivers | 2.915 |
| gender | 0.775 |
| urban size | -1.440 |
| density | 0.000 |
| const | 0.909 |
| income | 0.083 |
| own home | 0.791 |
| gender | -0.035 |
| density | 0.000 |
| cost per mile | 2.554 |
| $\mathrm{~L}_{21}$ | 3.148 |
| $\mathrm{~L}_{22}$ | 0.173 |
| $\mathrm{~L}_{31}$ | -3.759 |
| $\mathrm{~L}_{32}$ | -3.091 |
| $\mathrm{~L}_{33}$ | 2.322 |
| $\mathrm{~L}_{41}$ | 1.943 |
| $\mathrm{~L}_{42}$ | -1.306 |
| $\mathrm{~L}_{43}$ | 2.117 |
| $\mathrm{~L}_{44}$ | -0.751 |
| $\mathrm{~L}_{51}$ | 0.448 |
| -0.894 |  |
| 0.196 |  |
| -0.851 |  |
|  |  |

Table 4.38: 2009 NHTS - Probit coefficients

| name | estimate |
| :---: | :---: |
| const | 0.224 |
| income | 0.109 |
| num drivers | 0.823 |
| gender | -0.481 |
| urban size | -0.106 |
| density | 0.000 |
| const | -18.882 |
| income | 0.796 |
| num drivers | 11.923 |
| gender | -3.564 |
| urban size | -0.594 |
| density | -0.001 |
| const | -30.443 |
| income | 0.911 |
| num drivers | 15.916 |
| gender | -3.533 |
| urban size | -1.418 |
| density | -0.001 |
| const | -27.793 |
| income | 0.852 |
| num drivers | 15.454 |
| gender | -3.709 |
| urban size | -1.114 |
| density | -0.002 |
| $\mathrm{~L}_{21}$ | 8.464 |
| $\mathrm{~L}_{22}$ | 4.471 |
| $\mathrm{~L}_{31}$ | 0.218 |
| $\mathrm{~L}_{32}$ | 3.950 |
| $\mathrm{~L}_{33}$ | 6.264 |
| $\mathrm{~L}_{41}$ | 2.567 |
| $\mathrm{~L}_{42}$ | 4.395 |
| $\mathrm{~L}_{43}$ | 3.408 |
| $\mathrm{~L}_{44}$ | -0.027 |
| max LL | -1059.813 |
| n | 1136.000 |
|  |  |

Table 4.40: 2009 NHTS - Regression coefficients

| name | estimate | SD | t | p |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| const | 0.505 | 0.217 | 2.324 | 0.020 |
| income | 0.102 | 0.010 | 10.416 | 0.000 |
| own home | 0.429 | 0.148 | 2.903 | 0.004 |
| gender | -0.146 | 0.098 | -1.483 | 0.138 |
| density | 0.000 | 0.000 | -7.985 | 0.000 |
| cost per mile | 2.619 | 1.173 | 2.234 | 0.026 |
| $\sigma$ | 1.628 |  |  |  |
| adj R2 | 0.689 |  |  |  |

### 4.5 Conclusions

In this chapter, we have argued that using actual choice probabilities is a good way to assess the predictive power of a discrete-continuous model. We have seen, using simulated samples that the conditional predictions offer a significant improvement over unconditional predictions when there is a high correlation between the error terms. Using the 2009 NHTS data, we have shown that ordered discretecontinuous models offer a modest improvement in predicting vehicle holding along with vehicle miles traveled. Both conditional and unconditional predicted probabilities using ordered models greatly outperform their unordered part. For instance, the median prediction using ODC is $63 \%$, approximately twice as much as the with the UDC. The results obtained from just the probit model, whose prediction compare with the ordered probit and ODC, illustrate that optimal values of UDC have probably not been reached in the maximization process. Altogether, we have illustrated that unordered models pose great challenges and suffer from competition with ordered ones for this application.

## Chapter 5: Random Effect Models for Free-Flow speed estimation

### 5.1 Introduction

Speed is a fundamental variable in the geometric design of highways and streets. Transportation engineers normally refer to the design speed to calculate the characteristics of geometric elements of the road, and to the operating speed to assess the consistency of the adopted design values along the designed road alignment. Hence, operating speed models are fundamental in road design since they can anticipate the speeds that will be adopted by drivers.

In this Chapter, we present results obtained from the estimation of free-flow speed on two-lane rural highways. The model structure adopted separates the estimate of the central tendency of speeds from the typical deviations of individual speeds. In the model the same set of variables can be used to evaluate the mean value and the standard deviation of the speed distribution; the desired speed percentile is then calculated considering the associated standard normal random variable (Z). Fixed effect (FE) models are also calibrated for comparison purposes and the (Bayesian Information Criterion) BIC criterion is used for variable selection and applied to both the FE and RE models. A summary of this work has recently been published in a peer-reviewed journal $\overline{B C M n t}$.

### 5.2 Literature review

Operating speeds reflect the speed behavior of drivers who are affected by the horizontal and vertical alignments as well as the cross section. As a consequence, operating speed data are collected from isolated vehicles moving in freeflow conditions. Free-flow speeds are generally normally distributed as indicated in many contributions Tra11 BDMC14. Usually, to assess if speed design consistency has been achieved, the 85th percentile of the distribution (V85) is considered Has04 MFT05], since it conventionally separates the population of prudent drivers from the small group of more aggressive drivers. Despite this widespread approach, some commentators contend that a knowledge of the parameters describing the entire distribution is more powerful and useful for applications and inferences Tra11 MFT05 Bon01.

Figueroa and Tarko MFT05 emphasized this concept with the following given example: of two different distributions, the first with a low mean speed ( $50 \mathrm{~km} / \mathrm{h}$ ) and high standard deviation ( $15 \mathrm{~km} / \mathrm{h}$ ), the second with high mean speed ( $60 \mathrm{~km} / \mathrm{h}$ ) and a low standard deviation ( $5 \mathrm{~km} / \mathrm{h}$ ), that have the same V85 ( $65 \mathrm{~km} / \mathrm{h}$ ). Hence, the V85 alone is not able to provide a comprehensive interpretation of the effect of road geometrics on operating speeds.

Several variables influence the operating speed. If on urban streets cross sectional and environmental variables seem to be more significant in modeling WDLH06 BM13, on rural highways the characteristics describing the horizontal and vertical alignments are found to be significant in a number of scientific and technical con-
tributions Tra11 MFT05 Tra03]. Despite the fact that a considerable amount of research on operating speeds has been produced in the last twenty years, more recent works have aimed at improving model predictions and at extending the spectrum of road typologies to those types that have not been fully investigated.

In July 2011 the Operational Effects of Geometrics Committee of the Transportation Research Board sponsored the publication of the E-C 151 Circular Tra11]. This document included some important remarks regarding the current level of research on the topic, and some criticisms and suggestions were made to improve model applicability and speed predictability.

According to the E-C 151 Circular Tra11, the majority of the models available in literature can predict the V85th percentile speeds for cars on horizontal curves, assuming they (the cars) maintain a constant speed throughout. Only a few models predict truck speeds, and speeds on tangents; some can estimate speed variations approaching and exiting the curves, and a few consider the possibility of variation in speeds within a curve; only one model [MFT05] allows for the evaluation of the entire speed distribution.

In the E-C 151 Circular Tra11, some remarks were also made on variables: many models contain the parameters describing the horizontal curvature, while few include variables related to the vertical alignment (i.e., grade), tangent, horizontalvertical combinations, cross-section elements (i.e., width of lanes), available sight distance, and posted speeds.

Starting from this state of the art, this research aims at the calibration of linear regression models able to predict any speed percentile. The proposed methodology
takes into account possible random effects caused by the structure of the data where sections are randomly selected from roads forming part of the two-lane highway network in the Northwest of Italy.

### 5.3 Speed database

The speed database was assembled at various stages from 2005 to 2011 with data from several road sections in the provinces of Turin, Vercelli and Alessandria (Italy). A series of observational surveys was carried out on several typologies of rural roads including freeways, multi-lane and two-lane highways. In this investigation, only the sub-database of two-lane rural roads was considered for model calibration. Speed data were collected from a total of 13 roads and 37 sections with the final database containing 6,567 speed observations, which were eventually used to calibrate the speed models. During the surveys, no data were measured in one lane, thus leading to 73 individual lanes investigated. Table 5.1 lists the identification code for roads and sections, the name, the length of the road, and the main geometric characteristics of sections. In particular, the table reports the lane width, the radius of the centerline (the symbol $\infty$ denotes tangent sections) and the average longitudinal grade across the sections. All the geometric characteristics were derived from regional GIS databases. For the some roads, several cross sections were selected when differences in the geometric characteristics and/or margin treatments were observed. The minimum distance between the closest sections of the same road was set equal to 2 km . Surveys were carried out at different time periods; thus it
is reasonable to assume that the same vehicles were not surveyed multiple times at different road sections.

Table 5.1: Geometric and operative characteristics of the selected road sections

| Road \# | Section <br> \# | Road name | Road length km | Lane width m | Radius m | $\begin{aligned} & \text { Grade } \\ & \pm \% \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & \mathrm{V}_{\min } \\ & \mathrm{km} / \mathrm{h} \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & \mathrm{V}_{\max } \\ & \mathrm{km} / \mathrm{h} \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & \mathrm{V}_{85} \\ & \mathrm{~km} / \mathrm{h} \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & \text { PSL } \\ & \mathrm{km} / \mathrm{h} \end{aligned}$ | $\mathrm{n}_{\text {obs }}$ |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| 1 | 1 | SP70-VC | 3.830 | 3.60 | $\infty$ | 1.50 | 39.0 | 97.0 | 76.0 | 70 | 429 |
| 2 | 2 | SP8-VC | 7.790 | 3.70 | 178.47 | 3.00 | 45.0 | 128.0 | 87.0 | 90 | 618 |
|  | 3 |  |  | 3.75 | $\infty$ | 0.00 | 32.0 | 157.0 | 85.0 | 50 | 972 |
| 3 | 4 | SP299-VC | 57.250 | 3.60 | 334.57 | 0.50 | 45.0 | 128.0 | 87.0 | 90 | 799 |
|  | 5 |  |  | 3.70 | $\infty$ | 1.00 | 38.0 | 130.0 | 89.0 | 90 | 669 |
| 4 | 6 | SS460-TO | 61.757 | 3.75 | 1000.00 | 1.44 | 57.0 | 122.6 | 93.2 | 70 | 192 |
|  | 7 |  |  | 3.75 | 304.00 | 5.14 | 24 | 114.0 | 94 | 70 | 312 |
|  | 8 | SS565-TO | 18.180 | 3.75 | $\infty$ | 2.09 | 57.0 | 124.0 | 98.0 | 70 | 101 |
| 5 | 9 | SS565-TO | 18.180 | 3.75 | 3226.00 | 4.69 | 52.0 | 114.0 | 91.0 | 70 | 101 |
|  | 10 |  |  | 3.25 | 150.00 | 8.50 | 46.0 | 77.0 | 70.1 | 50 | 87 |
|  | 11 |  |  | 3.00 | $\infty$ | 1.50 | 42.6 | 129.4 | 90.3 | 70 | 107 |
|  | 12 |  |  | 3.00 | $\infty$ | 0.00 | 46.7 | 128.6 | 94.3 | 70 | 120 |
|  | 13 |  |  | 3.00 | $\infty$ | 0.00 | 50.0 | 114.0 | 90.4 | 70 | 108 |
| 6 | 14 | SP55-AL | 18.180 | 3.00 | $\infty$ | 2.00 | 49.6 | 129.4 | 101.7 | 70 | 128 |
|  | 15 |  |  | 3.00 | $\infty$ | 0.00 | 49.0 | 127.8 | 95.9 | 70 | 127 |
|  | 16 |  |  | 3.00 | $\infty$ | 0.00 | 46.3 | 128.3 | 98.9 | 70 | 138 |
|  | 17 |  |  | 3.00 | $\infty$ | 0.00 | 49.4 | 149.6 | 95.3 | 70 | 128 |
|  | 18 |  |  | 3.50 | $\infty$ | 0.50 | 42.0 | 115.2 | 88.5 | 90 | 41 |
|  | 19 |  |  | 3.50 | $\infty$ | 0.50 | 73.0 | 130.0 | 106.6 | 90 | 29 |
|  | 20 |  |  | 3.50 | 2250.00 | 0.50 | 70.0 | 118.0 | 107.0 | 90 | 26 |
|  | 21 |  |  | 3.50 | $\infty$ | 0.50 | 58.0 | 127.0 | 112.9 | 90 | 28 |
|  | 22 |  |  | 3.50 | $\infty$ | 0.00 | 55.0 | 130.0 | 100.3 | 90 | 30 |
|  | 23 |  |  | 3.50 | 1502.00 | 1.00 | 32.0 | 72.0 | 57.4 | 50 | 32 |
|  | 24 | SP230-VC |  | 3.50 | $\infty$ | 0.00 | 59.0 | 110.0 | 92.6 | 70 | 27 |
| 7 | 25 | SP230-VC | 39.466 | 3.50 | 909 | 1.00 | 44.0 | 96.0 | 78.0 | 70 | 37 |
|  | 26 |  |  | 3.50 | 8351.25 | 0.00 | 47.0 | 98.0 | 85.5 | 70 | 38 |
|  | 27 |  |  | 3.50 | 452.00 | 0.00 | 44.0 | 70.0 | 57.5 | 50 | 36 |
|  | 28 |  |  | 3.50 | 1503.00 | 1.00 | 56.0 | 130.0 | 97.0 | 90 | 43 |
|  | 29 |  |  | 3.50 | $\infty$ | 1.00 | 65.0 | 119.5 | 107.9 | 90 | 38 |
|  | 30 |  |  | 3.50 | $\infty$ | 0.00 | 54.7 | 108.1 | 85.1 | 70 | 42 |
|  | 31 |  |  | 3.50 | $\infty$ | 0.00 | 44.3 | 120.2 | 83.6 | 70 | 140 |
| 8 | 32 | SP177-TO | 10.927 | 3.20 | 300.00 | 2.50 | 27.6 | 93.3 | 75.8 | 70 | 116 |
| 9 | 33 | SP176-TO | 4.961 | 3.80 | $\infty$ | 0.00 | 42.6 | 106.6 | 75.3 | 90 | 67 |
| 10 | 34 | SP267-TO | 8.839 | 3.50 | $\infty$ | 0.00 | 34.7 | 105.4 | 68.5 | 50 | 154 |
| 11 | 35 | SP220-TO | 4.045 | 3.80 | $\infty$ | 0.00 | 44.2 | 89.1 | 79.8 | 70 | 100 |
| 12 | 36 | SP183-TO | 2.156 | 3.50 | $\infty$ | 0.00 | 36.9 | 134.8 | 82.5 | 50 | 161 |
| 13 | 37 | SP23-TO | 92.223 | 3.50 | 550.00 | 0.50 | 36.4 | 192.1 | 102.1 | 90 | 249 |

Speed data were collected using two different techniques: longitudinal measurement by means of a laser speed gun, and cross-sectional measurement by means of a digital video camera positioned perpendicularly to the road axis. The type of technique was decided on the basis of the characteristics of the survey site, and the observation points were carefully selected so as to minimize any disturbance to traffic and to avoid any change in driver behavior.

To merge the data coming from the longitudinal and transversal surveys into the same dataset, a preliminary comparison of speeds detected with the use of the two devices was carried out. In particular, differences in speed distribution ascrib-
able to the precision and accuracy of the two measurement systems were carefully checked. A comparison of the speeds detected for the same vehicle with the two methods is reported in figure 5.1. All the data are included between the $10 \%$ lines across the equality line. The high coefficient of determination and the small standard error confirm the possibility of using the two datasets jointly to calibrate the same speed model. Speed data were collected under free-flow conditions assuming a minimum headway of 6 seconds, and at points where drivers assumed stationary speeds, hence along tangents in sections far from curves, and in sections located at the center of curves. Each observation included in the database was associated with first the corresponding percentile p and then the standardized normal variable Zp , derived from the average and standard deviation calculated on the sub-dataset of the lane $(\mathrm{Zp}=0$ when $\mathrm{p}=50 \%$, and $\mathrm{Zp}=1.036$ when $\mathrm{p}=85 \%)$.

Field inspections were carried out to collect information on the geometric characteristics of the transversal section (i.e., lane and shoulder width, posted speed limit, as well as the presence of driveways, retaining walls, ramps and barriers). Such investigations were supported by the collection of the same information from aerial views on Google Earth . Regarding the curvature (corresponding to the inverse of the radius) and the longitudinal grade, data were obtained from GIS databases thanks to the cooperation of the public agencies that manage the road networks.

Each set of measurements was subjected to the chi-squared and the Kolmogorov Smirnov tests CVC88 to check if data were normally distributed. In all cases the tests were successful. Table 5.1 also includes the minimum and the maximum speed values, the 85 th percentile of observed speeds, and the posted speed
limit. Fifteen sections belonging to roads SP230-VC and SP177-TO had less than 100 speed observations, which is typically the minimum number of observations recommended in speed surveys. This was due to the very low traffic volumes that occurred during the surveys. In these cases, the goodness of fit tests demonstrated that in each direction the number of speed data were sufficient to form a normal distribution. Moreover, minimum and maximum speed ranges were wide enough; hence, reasonably, the recorded speed data were considered representative of the speed conditions in those sections.

The posted speed limit was between 50 and $90 \mathrm{~km} / \mathrm{h}$, the maximum grade of $8.5 \%$. Fourteen of thirty-seven sections were on curves with radii ranging between 150 and 8351.25 m . The lane width was between 3 and 3.8 m . The road characteristics in Table 5.1 are representative of typical Italian two-lane rural highways, where the V85 is frequently observed to be above the posted speed limit (in the dataset this happens 32 times out of a total of 37 observations).

Figure 5.1: Comparison of operating speeds detected for the same vehicle from video image analysis and laser speed gun


Data were differentiated according to the direction of driving, since the same road feature may produce different effects depending on the side occupied with respect to the driving trajectory (right and closer, left and farther). Hence, all the elements located on the roadside have been considered two times for the two driving directions.

Table 5.2 contains the list of the thirty-four variables considered in the investigation with the raw statistics in order to understand the variability of each parameter, and consequently the field of validity for the models. Furthermore, the frequency, which counts the percentage of non-zero values, with which the variable is present in the database has also been reported. The variables included in Table 5.2 are a mix of numerical continuous, numerical discrete and Boolean, and are denoted in the table by the symbols NC, ND and B respectively. In the case of Boolean variables, 0 indicates that the element is absent, while the value 1 indicates that the element is present.

Some variables have been considered twice in an effort to understand if either their presence or density affects driver behavior. All the variables characterized by units expressed in No./km were estimated by summing the number of elements (i.e., ramps, driveways, intersections, and pedestrian crossings) in a section of 1 km across each investigated cross section. Throughout the surveys, particular attention was given to the roadside characteristics, since they are normally not taken into account in operating speed investigations on two-lane rural roads Tra11.

For both the right (R) and left (L) sides, the presence and width of shoulders (SR, SL, SRW, and SLW respectively), the presence and density of ramps (RLS,

Table 5.2: Summarized raw statistics of considered variables

| Variable | symbol | type | unit | min. | max. | $\mu$ | $\sigma$ | Frequency |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| Posted speed limit | PSL | ND | km/h | 50 | 90 | 73.0 | 13.610 | 73 | 100\% |
| Posted speed limit variation | $\triangle \mathrm{PSL}$ | ND | $\mathrm{km} / \mathrm{h}$ | 0 | 20 | 0.5 | 3.287 | 2 | 3\% |
| Lane width | LW | NC | m | 3.0 | 3.8 | 3.5 | 0.260 | 73 | 100\% |
| Curvature | 1/R | NC | m-1 | 0 | $6.67 \mathrm{e}-3$ | $8.28 \mathrm{e}-4$ | $1.61 \mathrm{e}-3$ | 28 | 38\% |
| Longitudinal grade | LG | NC | \% | -8.85 | 8.50 | -0.012 | 2.110 | 41 | 56\% |
| Shoulder right | SR | B | - | 0 | 1 | - | - | 69 | 95\% |
| Shoulder left | SL | B | - | 0 | 1 | - | - | 69 | 95\% |
| Shoulder right width | SRW | NC | m | 0.0 | 1.5 | 0.9 | 0.437 | 69 | 95\% |
| Shoulder left width | SLW | NC | m | 0.0 | 1.5 | 0.9 | 0.437 | 69 | 95\% |
| Ramp left side | RLS | B | - | 0 | 1 | - | - | 5 | 7\% |
| Ramp right side | RRS | B | - | 0 | 1 | - | - | 5 | 7\% |
| Ramp density left side | TRDLS | NC | $\mathrm{km}^{-1}$ | 0.0 | 2.0 | 0.1 | 0.323 | 5 | 7\% |
| Ramp density right side | TRDRS | NC | $\mathrm{km}^{-1}$ | 0.0 | 2.0 | 0.1 | 0.323 | 5 | 7\% |
| Driveways left side | DLS | B | - | 0 | 1 | - | - | 55 | 75\% |
| Driveways right side | DRS | B | - | 0 | 1 | - | - | 55 | 75\% |
| Driveway density left side | DDLS | NC | $\mathrm{km}^{-1}$ | 0.0 | 8.0 | 2.3 | 2.321 | 55 | 75\% |
| Driveway density right side | DDRS | NC | $\mathrm{km}^{-1}$ | 0.0 | 8.0 | 2.3 | 2.325 | 55 | 75\% |
| Intersections left side | ILS | B | - | 0 | 1 | - | - | 39 | 53\% |
| Intersections right side | IRS | B | - | 0 | 1 | - | - | 39 | 53\% |
| Intersection density left side | IDLS | NC | $\mathrm{km}^{-1}$ | 0.0 | 5.0 | 1.1 | 1.362 | 39 | 53\% |
| Intersection density right side | IDRS | NC | $\mathrm{km}^{-1}$ | 0.0 | 5.0 | 1.1 | 1.362 | 39 | $53 \%$ |
| Stopping places Lay-by left side | SPLS | B | - | 0 | 1 | - | - | 25 | 34\% |
| Stopping places Lay-byright side | SPRS | B | - | 0 | 1 | - | - | 27 | 37\% |
| Sidewalk left side | SLS | B | - | 0 | 1 | - | - | 13 | 18\% |
| Sidewalk right side | SRS | B | - | 0 | 1 | - | - | 13 | 18\% |
| Pedestrian crossing | Ped | B | - | 0 | 1 | - | - | 12 | 16\% |
| Pedestrian crossing density | PedD | NC | $\mathrm{km}^{-1}$ | 0.0 | 4.0 | 0.3 | 0.845 | 12 | 16\% |
| Parking lanes left side | PKLLS | B | - | 0 | 1 | - | - | 1 | 1\% |
| Parking lanes right side | PKLRS | B | - | 0 | 1 | - | - | 1 | 1\% |
| Safety barrier left side | SBLS | B | - | 0 | 1 | - | - | 19 | 26\% |
| Safety barrier right side | SBRS | B | - | 0 | 1 | - | - | 20 | 27\% |
| (Retaining) Wall left side | WLS | B | - | 0 | 1 | - | - | 1 | 1\% |
| (Retaining) Wall right side | WRS | B | - | 0 | 1 | - | - | 1 | 1\% |

RRS, TRDLS, and TRDRS), the presence and the density of driveways (DLS, DRS, DDLS, and DDRS), the presence of lay-bys (LBR-SR and LBL-SL), sidewalks (SLS and SRS), parking lanes (PKLLS and PKLRS), safety barriers (SBLS and SBRS), and retaining walls (WLS and WRS) were carefully noted, as well as, the presence and density of pedestrian crossings (Ped and PedD).

### 5.4 Modeling approach

In order to evaluate the operating speed, we adopted the model structure proposed by Figueroa and Tarko MFT05. This model structure separates the estimate of the central tendency of speeds from the typical deviations of individual speeds, which is a function of the driving skills and decisions of individual drivers. In the speed dataset each speed data is a speed percentile (p) for a single direction
(d), on a specific section (s) and on a specific road (r); thus the sample dataset consists of data randomly extracted from sections and roads in the road network.

### 5.4.1 Fixed and random effect models

The data collected according to the methodology described in Section 5.3, contains repeated measurements; multiple observations are in fact available for the same road, the same section and for both directions. Random effects were included in the model to account for the dependency between any estimation errors from individual observations. They evaluate the existence of any differences between the speed predictions for all directions/sections/roads and the corresponding predictions for a specific direction/section/road. They are considered normally distributed according to the following distributions:

$$
\begin{align*}
& \alpha_{\mathrm{r}} \sim \mathrm{~N}\left(0, \sigma_{\mathrm{r}}^{2}\right) \\
& \alpha_{\mathrm{S}} \sim \mathrm{~N}\left(0, \sigma_{\mathrm{s}}^{2}\right)  \tag{5.1}\\
& \alpha_{\mathrm{d}} \sim \mathrm{~N}\left(0, \sigma_{\mathrm{d}}^{2}\right)
\end{align*}
$$

The dependent variable (Vrsd,i), which represents the generic observed speed (i) at a certain percentile (p) in a direction (d), section (s) and road (r), is then derived from a random effect (RE) model as follows:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathrm{V}_{\mathrm{rsd}, \mathrm{i}}=\beta_{0}+\sum_{\mathrm{k}} \beta_{\mathrm{k}}^{\mathrm{C}} \mathrm{X}_{\mathrm{rsd}, \mathrm{k}}^{\mathrm{C}}+\sum_{\mathrm{j}} \beta_{\mathrm{j}}^{\mathrm{D}}\left(\mathrm{Z}_{\mathrm{p}} \mathrm{X}_{\mathrm{rsd}, \mathrm{j}}^{\mathrm{D}}\right)+\sum_{\mathrm{m} \in\{\mathrm{r}, \mathrm{~s}, \mathrm{~d}\}} \alpha_{\mathrm{m}}+\epsilon_{\mathrm{rsd}, \mathrm{i}} \tag{5.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

in which $\beta_{0}$ is the general model intercept, $\beta^{\mathrm{C}}$ and $\beta^{\mathrm{D}}$ are calibration parameters for the variables affecting the estimated mean $\mathrm{X}^{\mathrm{C}}$, and the estimated standard deviation $\mathrm{X}^{\mathrm{D}}$ respectively. $\mathrm{Z}_{\mathrm{p}}$ is the standardized normal variable. The sum $\sum_{\mathrm{m} \in\{\mathrm{r}, \mathrm{s}, \mathrm{d}\}} \alpha_{\mathrm{m}}$ is the cumulation of the random effects. $\epsilon_{\mathrm{rsd}, \mathrm{i}}$ is the error associated with each measurement; this is the same "regular" error terms than in regular regressions. In equation 5.2, the second term represents the central tendency term, while the third represents the dispersion term. If random effects from equation 5.2 are assumed to be constants to be estimated (instead of being normally distributed), the model becomes a fixed effect (FE) model. It is customary to use Greek letters for random effects and Latin letters for fixed effects.

### 5.4.2 Variable selection

The Information Criterion (BIC) postulated by Schwarz Sch78] was used to select the variables that significantly affect driver speed behavior from all the possible covariates. The model with the lowest BIC function value $\mathrm{f}_{\mathrm{BIC}}$, calculated according to formula 5.3 , would be preferred:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathrm{f}_{\mathrm{BIC}}=-2 \hat{\mathrm{LL}}+\mathrm{k} \ln (\mathrm{n}) \tag{5.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

In this equation, $\hat{L L}$ is the maximized value of the $\log$-Likelihood function, n the number of observations, and k is the number of parameters included in the model. According to the structure of equation 5.2, the number of parameters k is equal to the sum of the size of coefficients $\beta_{0}, \beta^{\mathrm{C}}$ and $\beta^{\mathrm{D}}$. Only the variables that
contributed to the minimization of the BIC function were selected and included in the model.

### 5.5 Model calibration

A total of three models have been calibrated. Model \#1 is a fixed effect (FE) model, in which a simple multiple regression analysis was performed by including all the variables selected according to the BIC criterion. Model \#2 is a FE model that was calibrated with the variables selected by the random effects (RE) model and, finally, model \#3 is an RE model, which was also calibrated using variables selected according to the BIC criterion.

Analyses have been carried out through the use of the R-software version 3.0.2, in particular using the REML algorithm running the lme4 package R C15 [BMBW15]. The synthesis of results from model calibration can be found in tables 5.3 and 5.4. From an analysis of the table, it can be observed that the BIC criterion selects different variables when applied to FE or RE regression types. In the FE model, both geometric characteristics and Z values are selected, while the same method when applied to the RE model only keeps the section curvature and the pedestrian density in addition to the Z variables.

In model $\# 1$, twenty of the thirty-three variables resulted significant with respect to direction of the central tendency of data, while eighteen variables are responsible for the dispersion of speed data as a function of the percentile p . It was noted that the central tendency did not appear to be affected by the presence
on the left side of shoulders, ramps, barriers, retaining walls and driveways, nor by the presence of stopping places and by the intersection density along the road. The presence on the right side of barriers and retaining wall did not prove relevant either. The dispersion around the average speed is affected by a number of variables. It is worth noting that the presence of stopping places and retaining walls on both sides are excluded from the model.

In the case of models $\# 2$ and $\# 3$, the group of significant variables is the same since it was selected using the BIC criterion for model $\# 3$, as explained before. Table 3 shows that a drastic change of significant variables occurred, since the central value of speed distribution is affected by the curvature and the presence of a sidewalk on the right side (i.e., the closest sidewalk to the driving trajectory), while the dispersion is not affected by the presence of a shoulder and stopping places located on the left side.

Tables 5.3 and 5.4 contain the synthesis of the statistical analyses carried out with the three models. The variables in the two tables are described in table 5.2.

The quality of the results obtained can be appreciated in the following figures, where a comparison of observed vs. predicted speed values has been presented, with the results for model \#1 reported in figure 5.2 and those for model $\# 2$ in figure 5.6 . The results of these two models are compared with those of model $\# 3$ in figures 5.3 and 5.7 respectively. The graph in figure 5.7 compares the RE model \#3 and the FE model $\# 1$, for which the variable selection is not the same.

In figure 5.3 sets of points appear to be distributed randomly along the identity line $(y=x)$. However, the predicted values of the RE model are much closer to the

Table 5.3: Model 1 and 2 - coefficients and significant variables

| Variable | Model 1 |  |  | Model 2 |  |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
|  | estimate | s.d. | p-value | estimate | s.d. | p-value |
| (Intercept) | 98.48 | 1.07 | 0.000 | 77.27 | 0.10 | 0.000 |
| DDLS | 0.71 | 0.05 | 0.000 |  |  |  |
| DDRS | 0.81 | 0.05 | 0.000 |  |  |  |
| DRS | -8.03 | 0.19 | 0.000 |  |  |  |
| ILS | -1.87 | 0.17 | 0.000 |  |  |  |
| IRS | -2.78 | 0.17 | 0.000 |  |  |  |
| LG | -0.25 | 0.03 | 0.000 |  |  |  |
| LW | -10.59 | 0.27 | 0.000 |  |  |  |
| Ped | -5.66 | 0.45 | 0.000 |  |  |  |
| PedD | -0.47 | 0.21 | 0.026 | -7.12 | 0.14 | 0.000 |
| PKLLS | 6.15 | 0.74 | 0.000 |  |  |  |
| PKLRS | 11.71 | 0.68 | 0.000 |  |  |  |
| PSL | 0.22 | 0.01 | 0.000 |  |  |  |
| RRS | 4.45 | 0.67 | 0.000 |  |  |  |
| SLS | -4.32 | 0.26 | 0.000 |  |  |  |
| SLW | 16.74 | 0.52 | 0.000 |  |  |  |
| SR | 3.22 | 0.28 | 0.000 |  |  |  |
| SRS | -6.29 | 0.25 | 0.000 |  |  |  |
| SRW | -13.47 | 0.52 | 0.000 |  |  |  |
| TRDRS | 0.86 | 0.50 | 0.086 |  |  |  |
| 1/R | -1151.00 | 38.90 | 0.000 | -1175.00 | 42.80 | 0.000 |
| $\mathrm{Z} \cdot 1 / \mathrm{R}$ | -202.20 | 27.21 | 0.000 | -33.67 | 55.06 | 0.541 |
| Z - DDRS | 0.98 | 0.05 | 0.000 | 1.02 | 0.10 | 0.000 |
| Z - DLS | -2.52 | 0.16 | 0.000 | -2.29 | 0.62 | 0.000 |
| Z - DRS | -3.20 | 0.20 | 0.000 | -2.78 | 0.56 | 0.000 |
| Z - IDRS | 0.18 | 0.09 | 0.046 | -0.14 | 0.23 | 0.545 |
| Z • ILS | -1.27 | 0.16 | 0.000 | -1.40 | 0.52 | 0.007 |
| Z $\cdot$ IRS | -3.25 | 0.21 | 0.000 | -2.40 | 0.50 | 0.000 |
| Z - Ped | 2.08 | 0.30 | 0.000 | 1.21 | 0.95 | 0.206 |
| Z P PKLLS | -3.46 | 0.68 | 0.000 | -3.28 | 1.35 | 0.015 |
| Z • PSL | 0.07 | 0.01 | 0.000 | 0.16 | 0.03 | 0.000 |
| Z - SBLS | -2.14 | 0.16 | 0.000 | -1.28 | 0.54 | 0.018 |
| Z - SBRS | -2.62 | 0.17 | 0.000 | -1.41 | 0.53 | 0.008 |
| Z - SLS | -2.59 | 0.22 | 0.000 | -2.91 | 0.57 | 0.000 |
| Z. SLW | 12.07 | 0.52 | 0.000 | 11.78 | 0.89 | 0.000 |
| Z.SR | 2.65 | 0.29 | 0.000 | 4.47 | 0.79 | 0.000 |
| Z - SRS | -3.32 | 0.22 | 0.000 | -3.22 | 0.55 | 0.000 |
| Z $\cdot$ SRW | -14.66 | 0.52 | 0.000 | -14.45 | 0.89 | 0.000 |
| Z • TRDLS |  |  |  | -4.01 | 1.01 | 0.000 |
| Z - TRDRS |  |  |  | -2.40 | 1.01 | 0.018 |
| Z . WLS |  |  |  | -2.77 | 1.09 | 0.011 |
| Z - WRS |  |  |  | -4.18 | 1.16 | 0.000 |
| Z - DDLS |  |  |  | 0.13 | 0.11 | 0.208 |
| $\mathrm{Z} \cdot \triangle \mathrm{PSL}$ |  |  |  | -0.13 | 0.06 | 0.046 |
| Z •IDLS |  |  |  | 0.22 | 0.23 | 0.341 |
| Z $\cdot$ LG |  |  |  | 0.09 | 0.05 | 0.075 |
| Z $\cdot$ LW |  |  |  | -1.60 | 1.16 | 0.167 |
| Z P PKLRS |  |  |  | 1.64 | 1.36 | 0.229 |
| Z $\cdot$ RLS |  |  |  | 5.32 | 1.62 | 0.001 |
| Z $\cdot \mathrm{RRS}$ |  |  |  | 3.58 | 1.58 | 0.024 |
| Z - SPRS |  |  |  | 0.39 | 0.45 | 0.383 |
| Zlane | 13.31 | 0.65 | 0.000 | 9.33 | 3.24 | 0.004 |
|  | Residual Degrees Corrected F-statisti $\mathrm{P}\left(\mathrm{F}_{38,68}\right.$ | andard freedor multipl 2182 $>2182$ | rror: 4.048 (df): 6528 $R^{2}: 0.927$ $h 38$ and 6828 df $<10 e-16$ | Residual df: 6532 <br> Corrected <br> F-statisti <br> $\mathrm{P}\left(\mathrm{F}_{34,68}\right.$ | $\begin{gathered} \hline \text { andard } \\ \text { nultipl } \\ 776 \mathrm{w} \\ >776 \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{aligned} & \text { cror: } 6.673 \\ & \mathrm{Z}^{2}: 0.8006 \\ & 34 \text { and } 6532 \mathrm{df} \\ & 10 \mathrm{e}-16 \end{aligned}$ |

line, which indicates a much better fit. A similar result can be seen in figure 5.7, with model $\# 2$ points that are further from the equality line. This is to be expected since the model selection for the regression is not optimal according to the BIC criterion.

Finally, figures 5.4, 5.5, 5.8, 5.9, 5.11 and 5.12, report the residual distributions for the three models, organized by road and section. The expected results for these box plots would be for all 13 boxes of road residuals and all 37 boxes of

Table 5.4: Model 3 - coefficients and significant variables

| Variable | Model 3 |  |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
|  | estimate | s.d. | p-value |
| Intercept | 79.34 | 1.82 | 0.000 |
| PedD | -7.61 | 1.94 | 0.000 |
| 1/R | -1949.00 | 1063.00 | 0.067 |
| Z | 10.99 | 0.69 | 0.000 |
| Z $\cdot 1 / \mathrm{R}$ | -134.10 | 11.69 | 0.000 |
| Z $\cdot$ SLS | -2.81 | 0.12 | 0.000 |
| Z $\cdot$ SBLS | -1.27 | 0.11 | 0.000 |
| Z •IDRS | -0.13 | 0.05 | 0.009 |
| Z • DLS | -2.34 | 0.13 | 0.000 |
| Z $\cdot$ Ped | 1.38 | 0.20 | 0.000 |
| Z - SRS | -3.14 | 0.12 | 0.000 |
| Z $\cdot$ SBRS | -1.44 | 0.11 | 0.000 |
| Z - SRW | -14.40 | 0.19 | 0.000 |
| Z.SLW | 11.94 | 0.19 | 0.000 |
| Z •ILS | -1.37 | 0.11 | 0.000 |
| Z P PSL | 0.15 | 0.01 | 0.000 |
| Z $\cdot$ DDRS | 1.00 | 0.02 | 0.000 |
| Z • DRS | -2.80 | 0.12 | 0.000 |
| Z $\cdot$ IRS | -2.40 | 0.11 | 0.000 |
| Z $\cdot$ SR | 3.99 | 0.17 | 0.000 |
| Z $\cdot$ PKLLS | -3.29 | 0.28 | 0.000 |
| Z $\cdot$ TRDLS | -4.21 | 0.21 | 0.000 |
| Z • RLS | 5.58 | -0.34 | 0.000 |
| Z $\cdot$ LW | -1.83 | 0.24 | 0.000 |
| Z - WRS | -3.38 | 0.24 | 0.000 |
| Z • IDLS | 0.22 | 0.05 | 0.000 |
| Z $\cdot$ LG | 0.09 | 0.01 | 0.000 |
| $\mathrm{Z} \cdot \mathrm{DDLS}$ | 0.11 | 0.02 | 0.000 |
| $\mathrm{Z} \cdot \triangle \mathrm{PSL}$ | -0.11 | 0.01 | 0.000 |
| Z •WLS | -1.99 | 0.23 | 0.000 |
| Z • PedD | 0.73 | 0.08 | 0.000 |
| Z P PKLRS | 1.63 | 0.29 | 0.000 |
| Z $\cdot$ TRDRS | -2.53 | 0.21 | 0.000 |
| $\mathrm{Z} \cdot \mathrm{RRS}$ | 3.74 | 0.33 | 0.000 |
| Z $\cdot$ LBRS | 0.40 | 0.09 | 0.000 |
|  | BIC at convergence: 36,775$\mathrm{R}^{2}: 0.9332$ |  |  |
|  | Random effect | Variance |  |
|  | Direction:Section | 19.45 |  |
|  | Section:Road | 85.96 |  |
|  | Road | 0.00 |  |
|  | Residuals | 3.86 |  |

section residuals to have approximately the same height and shape, and to be centered around zero. This would indicate that errors are independent and identically distributed for all roads and sections.

The plots 5.4 and 5.5 indicate that model 1 cannot be considered satisfactory due to the large dispersion of the residuals. For example, road \#7 has very high residuals in absolute value terms, suggesting a high variance, section \#18 has very low negative residuals for almost all observations suggesting a strong negative effect, and section 19 has very high residuals indicating a positive effect.

Model \#2 is not satisfactory either, since the residuals for roads (figure 5.8) are never centered around zero, while the RE model \#3 fixes most of the regression

Figure 5.2: Fitted and Observed Values for Model 1

problems. In fact, in this last case the errors for all roads and sections are centered around zero, hence the fitted values are not biased in any road or any section. The variance of the residuals is much lower than in the case of model $\# 1$ and $\# 2$. This illustrates a very interesting property of RE models: they do not simply shift the error terms for each value of the effects, but they also allow to reduce the spread of the residuals.

### 5.6 Conclusions

In this chapter fixed (FE) and random effect (RE) linear models have been applied to predict a full range of percentile values of the operating speed along tangents or curves of two lane rural highways. The model has been calibrated with

Figure 5.3: Comparison of Fitted and Observed Values - Model 1 and 3

data collected from surveys of isolated vehicles on a number of road sections in the Northwest of Italy. A total of 6,567 observations have been collected from 37 sections randomly selected from 13 roads. In total, 33 geometric and environmental variables have been taken into account for model estimation. The structure of the model separates the central tendency from the dispersion of speed data allowing the estimation of not only the 85 th percentile (which is usually regarded as a reference measure for operating speeds) but also the evaluation of any percentile through the standardized normal variable Z p.

The comparison across fixed effect and random effect models containing variables selected according to the BIC criterion demonstrates that the latter perform better from a statistical point of view. The free-flow speed data collected in this

Figure 5.4: Residuals for Model 1, by Road

study violate the assumptions of ordinary least squares regression which produces biased estimates and large dispersion of the residuals. The RE model, which correctly accounts for the sampling design, produces a very low level of errors and it does not suffer from the presence of outliers.

The RE model results (Model \#3) highlights once again Tra11 the effects of the curvature on the central tendency of speed distribution. The density of pedestrian crossing is the only other variable that significantly affects the mean value of free-flow speeds. According to the same model several cross-sectional elements located in the roads margins contribute to the dispersion of speed data around the central value. Each element affects driver behavior in a small measure, but when all these effects are taken into account the differences between drivers behavior become

Figure 5.5: Residuals for Model 1, by Section

significant. When analyzing the single REs it is possible to conclude that road effects are negligible, that most of the errors are associated with a road section and for a lesser extent to the direction effect, and that the residuals have low standard deviation.

The results obtained also clearly demonstrate that speed predictions are less variable and more transferable if they are obtained from random effect models than from fixed effect models.

Future investigation might be aimed at the validation of the model presented here with speed data relative to different driving environments and collected with different measurement technologies.

Figure 5.6: Fitted and Observed Values for Model 2


Figure 5.7: Comparison of Fitted and Observed Values - Model 2 and 3


Figure 5.8: Residuals for Model 2, by Road


Figure 5.9: Residuals for Model 2, by Section


Figure 5.10: Fitted and Observed Values for Model 3


Figure 5.11: Residuals for Model 3, by Road


Figure 5.12: Residuals for Model 3, by Section


## Chapter 6: Validation of Random Effects

### 6.1 Introduction

In this chapter, we propose methods to predict quantiles of speed data distributions for road sections that were not in the original sample and for which we suppose to have very few observations available. We have shown that the theory of linear models can be used to estimate random effect models and to predict their realized values in the sample. Our problem, however, poses two challenges. First, we are interested in making out of sample predictions, and in order to do that we need to calculate random effects in the new road section. Second, our modeling approach makes use of speed quantiles as predictors of the linear model; those are not readily available for the new sections.

Random effects in most situations are assumed to have zero mean and therefore the best a priori predictor for random effects in a new road section is zero. We claim that better predictors could be produced by considering an auxiliary, simpler random effect model whose purpose is to overcome the unavailability of quantiles in the validation sample. We show that this auxiliary model, although inferior to the actual model, can provide good random effect predictors by sampling as little as five observations for each new section.

Searle MSN08, p. 260] suggests to model random effect pairs jointly; this way to proceed takes advantage of the potential correlation existing between them. We followed this idea and we use it to build our auxiliary model. We correlate the random effects of the original model with the random effects to be defined for the new section and we use the first one to predict the latter.

Our validation approach is based on jackknife technique [ET93, p. 141,237]. The validation is performed on the quantiles of 31 sections; predictions for each section are made based on the information contained in the remaining sections. This is similar to regular validation schemes that calibrate a model on $80 \%$ of the sample and use it to make predictions for the remaining $20 \%$ of the sample. With the jackknife scheme, however, each set of predictions is made using a different training sample.

### 6.2 One random effect models

We describe our methodology for a simple case where the response variable is affected by a set of predictors X , one random effect $\alpha_{\mathrm{S}}$ and an error term $\epsilon$ :

$$
\mathrm{Y}_{\mathrm{si}}=\mathrm{X}_{\mathrm{si}} \beta+\alpha_{\mathrm{s}}+\epsilon_{\mathrm{si}}
$$

Where $\alpha_{\mathrm{S}}$ and $\epsilon_{\mathrm{si}}$ are independent and follow a normal distribution:

$$
\alpha_{\mathrm{s}} \sim \mathrm{~N}\left(0, \sigma_{\mathrm{S}}^{2}\right)
$$

$$
\epsilon_{\mathrm{si}} \sim \mathrm{~N}\left(0, \sigma^{2}\right)
$$

Once the model is calibrated, estimates for $\beta, \sigma_{\mathrm{s}}^{2}$ and $\sigma^{2}$ are available. Predictors for the realized values of $\alpha_{\mathrm{S}}$ in the sample can be computed using either the true or the estimated values of the parameters. If our interest is focused on the value of $\alpha_{\mathrm{s}^{\prime}}$ in a new section that is not in the sample, the best we can do without further modeling assumptions is to predict the overall mean of the random effects: $\hat{\alpha}_{\mathrm{s}^{\prime}}=0$.

It is worth noting that we estimate $\beta, \sigma_{\mathrm{s}}^{2}$ and $\sigma^{2}$ because they are parameters of the model. On the other side we predict $\alpha_{\mathrm{S}}$ and $\mathrm{Y}_{\mathrm{si}}$ because they are regular random variables.

Let's assume that we are interested in predicting random effects for a new section $\mathrm{s}^{\prime}$ with unknown random effect $\alpha_{\mathrm{s}^{\prime}}$. The best a priori estimate of $\alpha_{\mathrm{s}^{\prime}}$ is zero since $\alpha_{\mathrm{s}^{\prime}} \sim \mathrm{N}\left(0, \sigma_{\mathrm{s}}^{2}\right)$. In some contexts this may be satisfying, but we are exploring methods to sample a few observations in the new section $s^{\prime}$ in order to improve our knowledge about $\alpha_{\mathrm{s}^{\prime}}$ and build a better a posteriori estimator.

The terms a priori and a posteriori are used in their classic meaning here. a priori refers to what happens before we observe data to predict $\alpha_{\mathrm{s}^{\prime}}$ and a posteriori refers to what happens after we observe data for the prediction. No Bayesian inference is performed in this chapter.

### 6.2.1 Conditional mean

Suppose that we observe k observations $\mathrm{Y}_{\mathrm{s}^{\prime} 1}, \mathrm{Y}_{\mathrm{s}^{\prime} 2}, \ldots, \mathrm{Y}_{\mathrm{s}^{\prime} \mathrm{k}}$ in the new section. For illustration purposes we will work with $\mathrm{k}=3$. Our objective is to find a good
predictor of $\alpha_{\mathrm{s}^{\prime}}$.
First, we note that we cannot observe $\alpha_{\mathrm{s}^{\prime}}$ directly: we always observe $\alpha_{\mathrm{s}^{\prime}}+\epsilon_{\mathrm{s}^{\prime} \mathrm{i}}$. We start by defining this sum of residuals:

$$
\mathrm{r}_{\mathrm{s}^{\prime} \mathrm{i}}=\mathrm{Y}_{\mathrm{s}^{\prime} \mathrm{i}}-\mathrm{X}_{\mathrm{s}^{\prime} \mathrm{i}} \hat{\beta}
$$

We cannot observe $\mathrm{Y}_{\mathrm{s}^{\prime} \mathrm{i}}-\mathrm{X}_{\mathrm{s}^{\prime} \mathrm{i}} \beta$ because we do not know the value $\beta$, so we will use the estimated value $\hat{\beta}$ from model calibration to estimate the total residuals.

We know by hypothesis that $\mathrm{u}=\left(\alpha_{\mathrm{s}^{\prime}}\right)$ follows a normal distribution with mean zero and variance $\mathrm{D}=\left(\sigma_{\mathrm{s}}^{2}\right)$.

We know that $\mathrm{r}=\left(\mathrm{r}_{\mathrm{s}^{\prime} 1}, \mathrm{r}_{\mathrm{s}^{\prime} 2}, \mathrm{r}_{\mathrm{s}^{\prime} 3}\right)$ has approximately a zero mean and variance:

$$
\mathrm{V}=\left[\begin{array}{ccc}
\sigma_{\mathrm{s}}^{2}+\sigma^{2} & \sigma_{\mathrm{s}}^{2} & \sigma_{\mathrm{S}}^{2} \\
\sigma_{\mathrm{s}}^{2} & \sigma_{\mathrm{s}}^{2}+\sigma^{2} & \sigma_{\mathrm{s}}^{2} \\
\sigma_{\mathrm{s}}^{2} & \sigma_{\mathrm{s}}^{2} & \sigma_{\mathrm{s}}^{2}+\sigma^{2}
\end{array}\right]
$$

We can also write V like this:

$$
\mathrm{V}=\sigma^{2} \mathrm{I}+\sigma_{\mathrm{s}}^{2}
$$

V is approximate because r was not calculated with the real parameter of the model. The approximate covariance between the random effect $\alpha_{s^{\prime}}$ and one given total residual is:

$$
\operatorname{Cov}\left(\alpha_{\mathrm{s}^{\prime}}, \mathrm{r}_{\mathrm{s}^{\prime} \mathrm{i}}\right) \approx \sigma_{\mathrm{s}}^{2}
$$

So we can write that the approximate covariance $C$ between $u$ and $r$ is:

$$
\mathrm{C}=\left[\begin{array}{lll}
\sigma_{\mathrm{s}}^{2} & \sigma_{\mathrm{s}}^{2} & \sigma_{\mathrm{s}}^{2}
\end{array}\right]
$$

or, with $\mathbf{1}_{\mathrm{m} \times \mathrm{n}}$ being a $\mathrm{m} \times \mathrm{n}$ matrix of ones:

$$
\mathrm{C}=\sigma_{\mathrm{s}}^{2} \mathbf{1}_{1 \times \mathrm{k}}
$$

and then:

$$
\left[\begin{array}{l}
\mathrm{u} \\
\mathrm{r}
\end{array}\right] \sim\left(\left[\begin{array}{l}
0 \\
0
\end{array}\right],\left[\begin{array}{cc}
\mathrm{D} & \mathrm{C} \\
\mathrm{C}^{\mathrm{T}} & \mathrm{~V}
\end{array}\right]\right)
$$

Here we do not make claims on the joint distribution of $(u, r)$. It is sufficient to know the first and second moments of ( $\mathrm{u}, \mathrm{r}$ ) to derive the best linear unbiased predictor (BLUP) of $u$. If the joint distribution were normal, the BLUP would be the overall best predictor of $u$, however it will not be the case for our final application.

### 6.2.2 Best predictor

Once we observe $r$, the BLUP of $u$ is the conditional mean. The expectation of $u \mid r$ is given by:

$$
\mathrm{E}(\mathrm{u} \mid \mathrm{r})=\mathrm{CV}^{-1} \mathrm{r}
$$

If ( $u, r$ ) were jointly normal, the BLUP would happen to be the best predictor.
In the case of only one random effect $u$ will have dimension one and is equal to $\alpha_{s^{\prime}}$. The predicted value for an observation i in section $\mathrm{s}^{\prime}$ will be:

$$
\hat{\mathrm{Y}}_{\mathrm{s}^{\prime} \mathrm{i}}=\mathrm{X}_{\mathrm{s}^{\prime} \mathrm{i}} \hat{\beta}+\hat{\alpha}_{\mathrm{s}^{\prime}}
$$

We can estimate $\hat{\beta}$ relatively easily so the main challenge for this problem is to predict $\hat{\alpha}_{s^{\prime}}$. Our objective is to investigate what is the smallest sample in section $\mathrm{s}^{\prime}$ we can use to predict $\alpha_{\mathrm{s}^{\prime}}$ satisfactorily. Generally, the prediction converges faster
when $\sigma^{2}$ is low and $\sigma_{\mathrm{S}}^{2}$ is high because then one single observation of r is less noisy and more correlated with the unknown realized value $\alpha_{\mathrm{s}^{\prime}}$.

### 6.3 Numerical examples

To illustrate our methodology, we use the speed database with 37 sections described in 5.3. In our first case study we ignore the direction effect. For all 31 sections considered, we calibrate the model on 36 sections, and we compute the estimated random effect with $\mathrm{k}=1,2,3, \ldots$ observations taken from the section that is left out for validation. This will provide a series of predicted random effects. We want to assess the convergence of the prediction.

Figures 6.1, 6.2, 6.3 and 6.4 contain the results obtained for each section. The subplots represent the predicted random effects in the validation section. The x axis corresponds to the number of observations that were used from the validation section in order to predict the random effects. For example, an x-value of 10 for section 3 means that we estimated a model with all sections but the third one, and then looked at 10 observations in the third section in order to predict the (realized) effect of section 3. Each subplot contains a solid dark red line, a solid pale red line and a dotted dark red line. The solid dark red line shows the predicted effects for the full model, assuming we knew the quantile information in the validation sample. This is not a realistic case for this problem but it is nevertheless the effect that we ultimately want to predict. The pale red line shows the predicted effects with the auxiliary model. These effects can be computed but we are only interested in how
they can help us predict the ones from the full model. The dashed red line shows the predicted effects for the full model but using only information from the auxiliary model. This is the prediction that we ultimately use.

From the figures 6.1, 6.2, 6.3 and 6.4 we can conclude the following. First, a relative convergence in the predicted effects as the number of observations grows is observed. Second, there is a substantial difference between the solid pale and dark red lines. This is not a problem in itself although the closer the two lines are, the more likely it will be to predict one from the other. Lastly, the dashed dark red line does not approximate the dark red line and it is mostly superposed to the pale red line, meaning that the predicted effect of the full model using the auxiliary model are no better approximation than just the predicted effects of the auxiliary model. This is obviously disappointing but we will see later that accounting for the design of the sample mostly fixes this problem.

Figure 6.1: Sections 1-12


Figure 6.2: Sections 13-22










$$
\begin{array}{|llll|}
\hline- \text { full } \quad \text { _- simple } & \ldots- & \text { conditional } \\
\hline
\end{array}
$$

Figure 6.3: Sections 23-31










$$
\begin{array}{|llll|}
\hline- \text { full } & - \\
\text { simple } & \cdots & \text { conditional } \\
\hline
\end{array}
$$

Figure 6.4: Sections 32-36


| - full | - | simple | $\cdots$ |
| :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- |

### 6.4 Two random effects models

The case with two nested random effects is described by the following equation:

$$
\mathrm{Y}_{\mathrm{sdi}}=\mathrm{X}_{\mathrm{sdi}} \beta+\alpha_{\mathrm{S}}+\beta_{\mathrm{d}}+\epsilon_{\mathrm{sdi}}
$$

where the random effect $\beta_{\mathrm{d}}$ is nested within the levels of $\alpha_{\mathrm{S}}$. To simplify the notation we write $\beta_{\mathrm{d}}$ and not $\beta_{\mathrm{d} \mid \mathrm{s}}$, but the latter is more precise.

In this model, a sample from the new section $s^{\prime}$ also includes some levels of the direction effect. In our case there are two directions for all sections. For illustration purpose we will assume that we sample one section, two directions and $\mathrm{k}=3$ observations per direction. The random effect to be predicted is:

$$
\mathrm{u}=\left(\alpha_{\mathrm{s}^{\prime}}, \beta_{1}, \beta_{2}\right)
$$

and the total residuals are given by:

$$
\mathrm{r}_{\mathrm{s}^{\prime} \mathrm{di}}=\mathrm{Y}_{\mathrm{s}^{\prime} \mathrm{di}}-\mathrm{X}_{\mathrm{s}^{\prime} \mathrm{di}} \beta
$$

Similar to the one random effect model, we do not observe a single random effect by itself, instead we always observe a sum of effects. We have the following covariance structure for the total residuals:

$$
\operatorname{var}\left(\mathrm{r}_{\mathrm{s}^{\prime} \mathrm{di}}\right) \approx \sigma_{\mathrm{s}}^{2}+\sigma_{\mathrm{d}}^{2}+\sigma^{2}
$$

$$
\operatorname{cov}\left(\mathrm{r}_{\mathrm{s}^{\prime} \mathrm{di}}, \mathrm{r}_{\mathrm{s}^{\prime} \mathrm{dj}}\right) \approx \sigma_{\mathrm{s}}^{2}+\sigma_{\mathrm{d}}^{2}
$$

and:

$$
\operatorname{cov}\left(\mathrm{r}_{\mathrm{s}^{\prime} \mathrm{di}^{\prime}}, \mathrm{r}_{\mathrm{s}^{\prime} \mathrm{d}^{\prime}}\right) \approx \sigma_{\mathrm{s}}^{2}
$$

These covariance components are approximated because the $\mathrm{r}_{\text {sdi }}$ terms are computed using estimated values of $\hat{\beta}$. Moreover, we will also plug in estimated values for the variance components. Even if we do not address here the effect of such an approximation, it is always useful to keep it in mind.

The covariance matrices $\mathrm{D}, \mathrm{C}$ and V of u and r are:

$$
\begin{gathered}
\mathrm{D}=\left[\begin{array}{ccc}
\sigma_{\mathrm{s}}^{2} & 0 & 0 \\
0 & \sigma_{\mathrm{d}}^{2} & 0 \\
0 & 0 & \sigma_{\mathrm{d}}^{2}
\end{array}\right] \\
\mathrm{V}=\sigma_{\mathrm{s}}^{2}+\left[\begin{array}{cccccc}
\sigma_{\mathrm{d}}^{2}+\sigma^{2} & \sigma_{\mathrm{d}}^{2} & \sigma_{\mathrm{d}}^{2} & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
\sigma_{\mathrm{d}}^{2} & \sigma_{\mathrm{d}}^{2}+\sigma^{2} & \sigma_{\mathrm{d}}^{2} & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
\sigma_{\mathrm{d}}^{2} & \sigma_{\mathrm{d}}^{2} & \sigma_{\mathrm{d}}^{2}+\sigma^{2} & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & \sigma_{\mathrm{d}}^{2}+\sigma^{2} & \sigma_{\mathrm{d}}^{2} & \sigma_{\mathrm{d}}^{2} \\
0 & 0 & 0 & \sigma_{d}^{2} & \sigma_{\mathrm{d}}^{2}+\sigma^{2} & \sigma_{\mathrm{d}}^{2} \\
0 & 0 & 0 & \sigma_{\mathrm{d}}^{2} & \sigma_{\mathrm{d}}^{2} & \sigma_{\mathrm{d}}^{2}+\sigma^{2}
\end{array}\right]
\end{gathered}
$$

or just, with $\mathbf{0}_{\mathrm{m} \times \mathrm{n}}$ being a matrix of zeros:

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \mathrm{V}=\sigma_{\mathrm{s}}^{2}+\left[\begin{array}{ccc}
\sigma_{\mathrm{d}}^{2}+\sigma^{2} \mathrm{I} & \mathbf{0}_{\mathrm{k} \times \mathrm{k}} \\
\mathbf{0}_{\mathrm{k} \times \mathrm{k}} & \sigma_{\mathrm{d}}^{2}+\sigma^{2} \mathrm{I}
\end{array}\right] \\
& \mathrm{C}=\left[\begin{array}{cccccc}
\sigma_{\mathrm{s}}^{2} & \sigma_{\mathrm{s}}^{2} & \sigma_{\mathrm{s}}^{2} & \sigma_{\mathrm{s}}^{2} & \sigma_{\mathrm{s}}^{2} & \sigma_{\mathrm{s}}^{2} \\
\sigma_{\mathrm{d}}^{2} & \sigma_{\mathrm{d}}^{2} & \sigma_{\mathrm{d}}^{2} & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & \sigma_{\mathrm{d}}^{2} & \sigma_{\mathrm{d}}^{2} & \sigma_{\mathrm{d}}^{2}
\end{array}\right]
\end{aligned}
$$

or:

$$
\mathrm{C}=\left[\begin{array}{cc}
\sigma_{\mathrm{s}}^{2} \mathbf{1}_{1 \times \mathrm{k}} & \sigma_{\mathrm{s}}^{2} \mathbf{1}_{1 \times \mathrm{k}} \\
\sigma_{\mathrm{d}}^{2} \mathbf{1}_{1 \times \mathrm{k}} & \mathbf{0}_{1 \times \mathrm{k}} \\
\mathbf{0}_{1 \times \mathrm{k}} & \sigma_{\mathrm{d}}^{2} \mathbf{1}_{1 \times \mathrm{k}}
\end{array}\right]
$$

The predicted random effects are still given by the expected mean:

$$
\mathrm{E}(\mathrm{u} \mid \mathrm{r})=\mathrm{CV}^{-1} \mathrm{r}
$$

The predicted value for an observation i in section $s^{\prime}$ and direction $d$ will be:

$$
\hat{\mathrm{Y}}_{\mathrm{s}^{\prime} \mathrm{di}}=\mathrm{X}_{\mathrm{s}^{\prime} \mathrm{di}} \hat{\beta}_{\mathrm{s}^{\prime} \mathrm{di}}+\hat{\alpha}_{\mathrm{s}^{\prime}}+\hat{\beta}_{\mathrm{d}}
$$

The sum $\hat{\alpha}_{\mathrm{s}^{\prime}}+\hat{\beta}_{\mathrm{d}}$ is always used in predicted values so we are always interested in assessing that it converges fast enough. For example, if $\hat{\alpha}_{\mathrm{s}^{\prime}}$ is underestimated but $\hat{\beta}_{\mathrm{d}}$ is overestimated, their sum might still be a good predictor of the real sum of random effects.

### 6.4.1 Numerical examples

For this second case, we use the same speed database and we keep the direction effect. For all the 31 sections considered, we calibrate the model on 36 sections, and we compute the predicted random effects with $\mathrm{k}=1,2,3, \ldots$ observations taken from each direction. We want to assess the convergence of $\hat{\alpha}_{\mathrm{s}^{\prime}}, \hat{\beta}_{1}$ and $\hat{\beta}_{2}$.

Figures 6.5 through 6.8 should be read in the same way as figures 6.1 through 6.4. please note that we do not include the predicted random effect of the auxiliary model. The solid red line corresponds to the predicted section effect, and the two solid blue lines to the predicted direction effects. The dashed lines correspond to the
predicted effects using the auxiliary model and can be computed in the validation section.

For both the sections and directions, the predicted effects using the auxiliary model are very close to the ones using the full model. However there are still noticeable differences when very few observations are used for the prediction. For example, predictions in sections 8 and 27 are not so precise for only two or three observations.

We also note striking differences between predictions with one and two random effects. Effects with only a section component are not close to the "true" effects of the full model but incorporating the directions, thus accounting for the design of the sample, drastically improves the predictions.

Figure 6.5: Sections 1-12

Section 1


Section 7


## Section 10



Section 3


Section 8


Section 11


Section 5
Section 9

Section 12

-_ section - direction $-\ldots$ conditional

Figure 6.6: Sections 13-22

Section 13


Section 16


Section 20

number of obs.

## Section 14



Section 17


Section 21

number of obs.

Section 15
Section 18

Section 22

number of obs.

|  | section | - | direction |
| :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- |
|  | $\cdots-{ }^{-}$ | conditional |  |

Figure 6.7: Sections 23-31

Section 23


Section 26


Section 29


Section 24


Section 27


Section 30


Section 25


Section 28


Section 31

|  | section | direction | $\cdots-$ conditional |
| :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- |

Figure 6.8: Sections 32-36


|  | section | direction | $\cdots-$ | conditional |
| :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- |

### 6.5 Computation of the residuals

In the previous examples we were calculating:

$$
\mathrm{r}_{\mathrm{sdi}}=\mathrm{Y}_{\mathrm{sdi}}-\mathrm{X}_{\mathrm{sdi}}
$$

However it is not always possible to compute r. Suppose that we have the following model specification:

$$
\mathrm{Y}_{\mathrm{sdi}}=\mathrm{X}_{\mathrm{sdi}} \beta_{\mathrm{x}}+\mathrm{Z}_{\mathrm{sdi}} \beta_{\mathrm{z}}+\alpha_{\mathrm{S}}+\beta_{\mathrm{d}}+\epsilon_{\mathrm{sdi}}
$$

where $\mathrm{Z}_{\text {sdi }}$, which represents the regular variables multiplied by the normal quantiles Z , is not available in the validation sample. In this case, it is not possible to isolate the sum of random effects and we must rely on alternative methods.

The strategy here is to use the estimated total residuals from the first model, with only observable predictors X , to predict the random effects of the complicated model.

The simple (with X) and expanded (with X and Z) models are both calibrated and parameters are estimated from both models. In addition we also calculate the empirical correlation between the effects from both models. The ideal scenario is that corresponding effects from both models are perfectly correlated:

$$
\begin{gathered}
\mathrm{Y}_{\mathrm{sdi}}=\mathrm{X}_{\mathrm{sdi}} \beta_{*}+\alpha_{\mathrm{S} *}+\beta_{\mathrm{d} *}+\epsilon_{\mathrm{sdi} *} \\
\alpha_{\mathrm{S} *} \sim \mathrm{~N}\left(0, \sigma_{\mathrm{S} *}^{2}\right)
\end{gathered}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \beta_{\mathrm{d} *} \sim \mathrm{~N}\left(0, \sigma_{\mathrm{d} *}^{2}\right) \\
& \epsilon_{\mathrm{sdi} *} \sim \mathrm{~N}\left(0, \sigma_{*}^{2}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
\mathrm{Y}_{\mathrm{sdi}}=\mathrm{X}_{\mathrm{sdi}} \beta_{\mathrm{x}} & +\mathrm{W}_{\mathrm{sdi}} \beta_{\mathrm{w}}+\alpha_{\mathrm{S}}+\beta_{\mathrm{d}}+\epsilon_{\mathrm{sdi}} \\
\alpha_{\mathrm{S}} & \sim \mathrm{~N}\left(0, \sigma_{\mathrm{s}}^{2}\right) \\
\beta_{\mathrm{d}} & \sim \mathrm{~N}\left(0, \sigma_{\mathrm{d}}^{2}\right) \\
\epsilon_{\mathrm{sdi}} & \sim \mathrm{~N}\left(0, \sigma^{2}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

By design, the marginal distributions of the random effects are normal. However, the empirical analysis does not support the assumption that they are jointly normal so we can only hope to estimate first and second moments of all the effects and residuals to compute the BLUP.

We will assume that $\left(\alpha_{\mathrm{S}}, \alpha_{\mathrm{S} *}\right)$ and $\left(\beta_{\mathrm{d}}, \alpha_{\mathrm{S} *}\right)$ have correlation $\rho_{\alpha}$ and $\rho_{\beta}$, respectively, and derive the moments of $\mathrm{r} *$ and u using this correlation.

Figure 6.9 and 6.10 plot the predicted effects of one model against the other. The more correlated they are, the easier will be to predict one using the other.

Figure 6.9: Comparison of Section Effects


Figure 6.10: Comparison of Direction Effects


We can define the total residuals is the simple model like this:

$$
\mathrm{r}_{\mathrm{sdi} *}=\mathrm{Y}_{\text {sdi }}-\mathrm{X}_{\mathrm{sdi}} \beta_{*}
$$

We note that $\mathrm{r}_{\text {sdi* }}$ can be calculated easily in the validation sample. The variance of one of those residual is given by:

$$
\operatorname{Var}\left(\mathrm{r}_{\mathrm{sdi} *}\right)=\sigma_{\mathrm{s} *}^{2}+\sigma_{\mathrm{d} *}^{2}+\sigma_{*}^{2}
$$

the covariance of two residuals in the same direction is:

$$
\operatorname{Cov}\left(\mathrm{r}_{\mathrm{sdi} *}, \mathrm{r}_{\mathrm{sdj} *}\right)=\sigma_{\mathrm{s} *}^{2}+\sigma_{\mathrm{d} *}^{2}
$$

The covariance of two residuals not in the same direction is:

$$
\operatorname{Cov}\left(\mathrm{r}_{\mathrm{sdi} *}, \mathrm{r}_{\mathrm{sd}^{\prime} \mathrm{i}^{*} *}\right)=\sigma_{\mathrm{s} *}^{2}+\sigma_{\mathrm{d} *}^{2}
$$

The covariance between residuals and random effects are given by:

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \operatorname{Cov}\left(\mathrm{r}_{\mathrm{sdi} *}, \alpha_{\mathrm{s}}\right)=\operatorname{Cov}\left(\alpha_{\mathrm{s} *}+\beta_{\mathrm{d} *}+\epsilon_{\mathrm{sdi} *}, \alpha_{\mathrm{s}}\right)=\operatorname{Cov}\left(\alpha_{\mathrm{s} *}, \alpha_{\mathrm{s}}\right)=\rho_{\alpha} \sigma_{\mathrm{s}} \sigma_{\mathrm{s} *}=\sigma_{\mathrm{ss} *} \\
& \operatorname{Cov}\left(\mathrm{r}_{\mathrm{sdi} *}, \beta_{\mathrm{d}}\right)=\operatorname{Cov}\left(\alpha_{\mathrm{s} *}+\beta_{\mathrm{d} *}+\epsilon_{\mathrm{sdi} *}, \beta_{\mathrm{d}}\right)=\operatorname{Cov}\left(\beta_{\mathrm{s} *}, \beta_{\mathrm{s}}\right)=\rho_{\beta} \sigma_{\mathrm{d}} \sigma_{\mathrm{d} *}=\sigma_{\mathrm{dd} *}
\end{aligned}
$$

Therefore, the joint covariance of $\mathrm{r}_{*}$ and $\mathrm{u}=\left(\alpha_{\mathrm{S}}, \beta_{1}, \beta_{2}\right)$ is described by the following variance components:

D is the same as before:

$$
\mathrm{D}=\left[\begin{array}{ccc}
\sigma_{\mathrm{s}}^{2} & 0 & 0 \\
0 & \sigma_{\mathrm{d}}^{2} & 0 \\
0 & 0 & \sigma_{\mathrm{d}}^{2}
\end{array}\right]
$$

V is different because the random effects in r are from the simpler model:

$$
\mathrm{V}=\sigma_{\mathrm{s} *}^{2}+\left[\begin{array}{cccccc}
\sigma_{\mathrm{d} *}^{2}+\sigma_{*}^{2} & \sigma_{\mathrm{d} *}^{2} & \sigma_{\mathrm{d} *}^{2} & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
\sigma_{\mathrm{d} *}^{2} & \sigma_{\mathrm{d} *}^{2}+\sigma_{*}^{2} & \sigma_{\mathrm{d} *}^{2} & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
\sigma_{\mathrm{d} *}^{2} & \sigma_{\mathrm{d} *}^{2} & \sigma_{\mathrm{d} *}^{2}+\sigma_{*}^{2} & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & \sigma_{\mathrm{d} *}^{2}+\sigma_{*}^{2} & \sigma_{\mathrm{d} *}^{2} & \sigma_{\mathrm{d} *}^{2} \\
0 & 0 & 0 & \sigma_{\mathrm{d} *}^{2} & \sigma_{\mathrm{d} *}^{2}+\sigma_{*}^{2} & \sigma_{\mathrm{d} *}^{2} \\
0 & 0 & 0 & \sigma_{\mathrm{d} *}^{2} & \sigma_{\mathrm{d} *}^{2} & \sigma_{\mathrm{d} *}^{2}+\sigma_{*}^{2}
\end{array}\right]
$$

C is also affected:

$$
\mathrm{C}=\left[\begin{array}{cccccc}
\sigma_{\mathrm{SS} *} & \sigma_{\mathrm{SS} *} & \sigma_{\mathrm{SS} *} & \sigma_{\mathrm{SS} *} & \sigma_{\mathrm{SS} *} & \sigma_{\mathrm{SS} *} \\
\sigma_{\mathrm{dd} *} & \sigma_{\mathrm{dd} *} & \sigma_{\mathrm{dd} *} & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & \sigma_{\mathrm{dd} *} & \sigma_{\mathrm{dd} *} & \sigma_{\mathrm{dd} *}
\end{array}\right]
$$

### 6.6 Results: quantiles calculation

Tables 6.1 through 6.8 report predicted speed deciles. A number of patterns can be observed. First, some sections are predicted accurately. For example, sections $7,13,18$ and 27 have good predictions within 2-3 miles per hour for almost all the quantiles. Most central deciles $\left(40^{\text {th }}\right.$ to $60^{\text {th }}$ quantiles) have good predictions. However, this is not enough to the scope of this research, which aims at estimating quantiles of speed distributions. Furthermore, the additional observations collected to predict random effects could be used to predict the mean speed of the section with some accuracy. The worst value obtained for the predicted median ( $50^{\text {th }}$ quantile) is for section 29 , direction 1, with an observed median of 93.1 and a prediction of
88. This compare with the $10^{\text {th }}$ quantile that predicts 63.2 for an observed value of 72.3.

Second, we can observe that some sections are likely to have an error in part due to the prediction error of the random effects. One way to assess this is to observe the extreme quantiles and check what sections appear to underestimate both the $10^{\text {th }}$ and the $90^{\text {th }}$ quantiles. Two good examples of this are section 22 , direction 1 and section 23, direction 1. In the first case most deciles are underestimated and in the second case they are overestimated. Going back to the plots of predicted random effects, we see in figure 6.6 that the direction effects are not so precise with only five observations and this is likely a case where the prediction has created a small error. For section 23 we see in figure 6.7 that the section effect and one of the direction effect are overestimated with 5 observations, which would explain this component of the prediction error.

Third, the most obvious prediction error is the overestimation of low deciles and the underestimation of high deciles, or vice-versa. This can be observed for example in section 10 , direction 1 that underestimates the $10^{\text {th }}$ quantile by 5.3 but overestimates the $90^{\text {th }}$ quantile by 8.6. There might still be an error in the predicted random effect for this section but it cannot be fixed because the random effect is a constant added to all predictions in the same section and direction. The most likely cause for this kind of error lies in the estimated jackknife coefficients. All sections with severe quantile prediction errors also have a lot of jackknife coefficients that greatly differ from the full sample coefficients. We think that this is the most important source of error.

Table 6.1: Predicted quantiles sections $1,3,5$ and 7

| quantile | Section 1 |  |  |  | Section 3 |  |  |  | Section 5 |  |  |  | Section 7 |  |  |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
|  |  | 1 emp. |  | $2$ |  | 1 <br> emp |  | emp. |  | 1 emp. |  | emp. |  | 1 emp. |  | p. |
| 10 | 52.4 | 56 | 51.3 | 54 | 66.2 | 58 | 67 | 63 | 63.8 | 60 | 60.8 | 57 | 64.3 | 66 | 64.6 | 72.6 |
| 20 | 58.2 | 59 | 57.6 | 58 | 69.3 | 63 | 70.4 | 68 | 67.5 | 64 | 65.8 | 63 | 70.1 | 69 | 70.7 | 76 |
| 30 | 62.4 | 62 | 62.1 | 60 | 71.5 | 66 | 72.8 | 71 | 70.2 | 68 | 69.5 | 67 | 74.3 | 73 | 75.1 | 79.8 |
| 40 | 66 | 65.8 | 66 | 62 | 73.4 | 69 | 74.9 | 74 | 72.4 | 71 | 72.6 | 70 | 77.8 | 77 | 78.9 | 82 |
| 50 | 69.3 | 67 | 69.6 | 65 | 75.2 | 72 | 76.9 | 77 | 74.6 | 73 | 75.5 | 75 | 81.1 | 80 | 82.4 | 85 |
| 60 | 72.6 | 69 | 73.2 | 67 | 77 | 74 | 78.8 | 79 | 76.7 | 77 | 78.4 | 77 | 84.5 | 82 | 85.9 | 87 |
| 70 | 76.2 | 71 | 77.1 | 70 | 78.9 | 77 | 80.9 | 82 | 79 | 81 | 81.5 | 81.9 | 88 | 86.8 | 89.7 | 89 |
| 80 | 80.4 | 73 | 81.6 | 74 | 81.2 | 81 | 83.4 | 85 | 81.6 | 85 | 85.1 | 87 | 92.2 | 90 | 94.1 | 93 |
| 90 | 86.2 | 77.3 | 87.9 | 79 | 84.3 | 88 | 86.8 | 89 | 85.3 | 90 | 90.1 | 94 | 98 | 95 | 100.2 | 97.4 |

Table 6.2: Predicted quantiles sections $8,9,10,11$

| quantile | Section 8 |  |  |  | Section 9 |  |  |  | Section 10 |  |  |  | Section 11 |  |  |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
|  | dir 1 |  | dir 2 |  | ir |  | dir 2 |  | ir |  | dir 2 |  | dir 1 |  | dir 2 |  |
|  | pred. | emp. | pred. | emp. | pred. | emp. | pred. | emp. | pred. | emp. | pred. | emp. | pred. | emp. | pred. | emp. |
| 10 | 68.1 | 69.4 | 68.1 | 74.2 | 61.9 | 60 | 66.5 | 70 | 44.7 | 50 | 50.7 | 56 | 54.5 | 59.3 | 55.2 | 59.3 |
| 20 | 73.7 | 75.4 | 73.6 | 77 | 67.8 | 67 | 71.2 | 72.8 | 50.2 | 51.2 | 54.8 | 60 | 61.4 | 63.2 | 61.8 | 61.7 |
| 30 | 77.8 | 81 | 77.6 | 77.6 | 72.1 | 68 | 74.6 | 76 | 54.2 | 54.6 | 57.7 | 63 | 66.3 | 65.1 | 66.6 | 67.1 |
| 40 | 81.3 | 84 | 81 | 81.6 | 75.7 | 73 | 77.5 | 79.6 | 57.6 | 55 | 60.2 | 64 | 70.6 | 68.1 | 70.7 | 71 |
| 50 | 84.6 | 86 | 84.2 | 85 | 79.1 | 75 | 80.2 | 82 | 60.8 | 56 | 62.6 | 65 | 74.5 | 70.6 | 74.5 | 72.5 |
| 60 | 87.9 | 88.2 | 87.4 | 87.2 | 82.5 | 79 | 82.9 | 86.4 | 64 | 57 | 64.9 | 67 | 78.5 | 71.9 | 78.4 | 74 |
| 70 | 91.3 | 90 | 90.8 | 90 | 86.2 | 86 | 85.8 | 88 | 67.5 | 59 | 67.4 | 68 | 82.7 | 75.9 | 82.5 | 76.4 |
| 80 | 95.4 | 94.2 | 94.8 | 94.8 | 90.4 | 87 | 89.2 | 91.2 | 71.5 | 60.8 | 70.4 | 71.2 | 87.6 | 81.6 | 87.3 | 81.6 |
| 90 | 101.1 | 103.5 | 100.3 | 100.6 | 96.3 | 90 | 94 | 94.1 | 77 | 64.4 | 74.5 | 73 | 94.5 | 95.6 | 93.9 | 93 |

Table 6.3: Predicted quantiles sections 12,13,14,15

| quantile | Section 12 |  |  |  | Section 13 |  |  |  | Section 14 |  |  |  | Section 15 |  |  |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
|  | dir 1 |  | dir 2 |  | dir 1 |  | dir 2 |  | dir 1 |  | dir 2 |  | dir 1 |  | dir 2 |  |
|  | pred. | emp. | pred. | emp. | pred. | emp. | pred. | emp. | pred. | emp. | pred. | emp. | pred. | emp. | pred. | emp. |
| 10 | 63.1 | 59.7 | 61.7 | 59 | 65.6 | 62.7 | 64 | 65.8 | 64 | 67.1 | 61.1 | 67.8 | 67.2 | 64.3 | 58.5 | 65.7 |
| 20 | 67.9 | 64.2 | 67.3 | 67.5 | 70.3 | 67.4 | 69.3 | 68.5 | 71 | 70.6 | 69.2 | 72.1 | 72.5 | 69.5 | 66.9 | 73.8 |
| 30 | 71.3 | 71.3 | 71.3 | 72 | 73.7 | 70.7 | 73.2 | 72 | 76.1 | 76.3 | 75.1 | 75.3 | 76.3 | 74.3 | 73 | 75.6 |
| 40 | 74.3 | 73.9 | 74.7 | 78.3 | 76.6 | 75.4 | 76.4 | 74.3 | 80.4 | 79.6 | 80.1 | 79.1 | 79.6 | 78 | 78.1 | 80.2 |
| 50 | 77 | 76.9 | 77.9 | 82.9 | 79.3 | 79.8 | 79.5 | 81.9 | 84.4 | 83.1 | 84.8 | 83 | 82.6 | 81.9 | 83 | 83.8 |
| 60 | 79.8 | 85.7 | 81 | 86 | 82 | 84.2 | 82.5 | 84.4 | 88.5 | 85.9 | 89.4 | 90.6 | 85.7 | 84.3 | 87.8 | 85.2 |
| 70 | 82.7 | 88.8 | 84.5 | 90 | 84.9 | 87.8 | 85.8 | 84.8 | 92.8 | 91 | 94.4 | 94.1 | 89 | 88.6 | 93 | 88.7 |
| 80 | 86.1 | 92.1 | 88.5 | 91 | 88.3 | 89.1 | 89.7 | 86.9 | 97.8 | 96.3 | 100.3 | 97.9 | 92.8 | 92.6 | 99.1 | 93.7 |
| 90 | 90.9 | 94.8 | 94 | 106.8 | 93 | 93.2 | 95 | 93.4 | 104.8 | 107.1 | 108.4 | 105.9 | 98.1 | 103.1 | 107.5 | 97.2 |

Table 6.4: Predicted quantiles sections 16,17,18,21

| quantile | Section 16 |  |  |  | Section 17 |  |  |  | Section 18 |  |  |  | Section 21 |  |  |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
|  | dir 1 |  | dir 2 |  | dir 1 |  | dir 2 |  | dir 1 |  | dir 2 |  | dir 1 |  | dir 2 |  |
|  | pred. | emp. | pred. | emp. | pred. | emp. | pred. | emp. | pred. | emp. | pred. | emp. | pred. | emp. | pred. | emp. |
| 10 | 64.8 | 71.7 | 64.4 | 71.3 | 60.4 | 66.2 | 63.4 | 67.8 | 51.5 | 51.9 | 50.5 | 52.6 | 73.2 | 73 | 73.6 | 81.7 |
| 20 | 71.5 | 75.2 | 71.1 | 74.6 | 67.9 | 69.2 | 69.9 | 70.9 | 58 | 54.2 | 57.5 | 56.6 | 80 | 88 | 80.7 | 89.2 |
| 30 | 76.4 | 80.2 | 76 | 76.3 | 73.4 | 72.9 | 74.6 | 74.4 | 62.8 | 58.4 | 62.6 | 60.9 | 85 | 92.5 | 85.8 | 95.3 |
| 40 | 80.5 | 82.5 | 80.1 | 79.6 | 78 | 74.5 | 78.6 | 77.4 | 66.8 | 65.3 | 66.9 | 62.2 | 89.2 | 97 | 90.1 | 98.4 |
| 50 | 84.4 | 85 | 84 | 82.2 | 82.4 | 76.9 | 82.3 | 80 | 70.5 | 67.2 | 70.9 | 68.5 | 93.1 | 98 | 94.2 | 104 |
| 60 | 88.3 | 88.3 | 87.9 | 84.4 | 86.8 | 85.4 | 86.1 | 83.3 | 74.3 | 69.7 | 74.9 | 71.8 | 97.1 | 99 | 98.3 | 105 |
| 70 | 92.4 | 90.5 | 92 | 91.5 | 91.4 | 92.3 | 90.1 | 88.7 | 78.3 | 74.9 | 79.2 | 75.4 | 101.3 | 99.5 | 102.6 | 105 |
| 80 | 97.3 | 93.5 | 96.9 | 94.3 | 96.9 | 96.3 | 94.8 | 92.4 | 83 | 80.3 | 84.2 | 84.9 | 106.2 | 100 | 107.7 | 111.8 |
| 90 | 104 | 108.6 | 103.6 | 100.2 | 104.4 | 99.3 | 101.3 | 94.1 | 89.6 | 91.2 | 91.2 | 91.7 | 113.1 | 105 | 114.8 | 114.9 |

Table 6.5: Predicted quantiles sections $22,23,24,25$

| quantile | Section 22 |  |  |  | Section 23 |  |  |  | Section 24 |  |  |  | Section 25 |  |  |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
|  | dir 1 |  | dir 2 |  | dir 1 |  | r 2 |  | dir 1 |  | dir 2 |  | dir 1 |  | dir 2 |  |
|  | pred. | emp. | pred. | emp. | pred. | emp. | pred. | emp. | pred. | emp. | pred. | emp. | pred. | emp. | pred. | emp. |
| 10 | 59.8 | 64.8 | 55.8 | 64 | 53.3 | 39.1 | 50 | 46 | 62.5 | 67 | 65.6 | 59.7 | 58.3 | 54 | 59.1 | 50.4 |
| 20 | 67.1 | 69 | 63.9 | 70 | 53.9 | 42.4 | 52.2 | 47 | 68.4 | 68.6 | 70.5 | 66 | 62 | 56.2 | 63 | 55.2 |
| 30 | 72.5 | 71.4 | 69.8 | 71 | 54.4 | 46.1 | 53.7 | 48 | 72.6 | 69 | 74.1 | 75.3 | 64.8 | 59.8 | 65.7 | 65.4 |
| 40 | 77 | 78 | 74.8 | 72 | 54.8 | 46.8 | 55.1 | 50 | 76.2 | 72.4 | 77.1 | 77.4 | 67.1 | 62.6 | 68.1 | 71.4 |
| 50 | 81.2 | 82 | 79.4 | 72 | 55.1 | 47.5 | 56.4 | 50.5 | 79.6 | 74 | 80 | 79 | 69.2 | 66 | 70.3 | 73 |
| 60 | 85.5 | 94 | 84.1 | 75 | 55.5 | 48.2 | 57.6 | 51.8 | 83 | 79.4 | 82.8 | 81.8 | 71.4 | 68.6 | 72.5 | 78.4 |
| 70 | 90 | 97.8 | 89.1 | 76 | 55.9 | 48.9 | 59 | 54.1 | 86.6 | 81 | 85.9 | 88.1 | 73.7 | 71 | 74.9 | 81.2 |
| 80 | 95.3 | 101 | 94.9 | 79 | 56.3 | 50.2 | 60.6 | 57.4 | 90.9 | 86 | 89.4 | 90.2 | 76.4 | 75 | 77.6 | 84.2 |
| 90 | 102.7 | 108.4 | 103 | 82 | 56.9 | 51 | 62.8 | 61.5 | 96.8 | 99 | 94.4 | 96.1 | 80.2 | 75 | 81.5 | 89 |

Table 6.6: Predicted quantiles sections 26,27,28,29

| quantile | Section 26 |  |  |  | Section 27 |  |  |  | Section 28 |  |  |  | Section 29 |  |  |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
|  | dir 1 |  | dir 2 |  | dir 1 |  | dir 2 |  | dir 1 |  | dir 2 |  | dir 1 |  | dir |  |
|  | pred. | emp. | pred. | emp. | pred. | emp. | pred. | emp. | pred. | emp. | pred. | emp. | pred. | emp. | pred. | emp. |
| 10 | 59.4 | 59.4 | 61.9 | 57.2 | 41.3 | 44.6 | 43 | 45.8 | 63.2 | 67 | 63.6 | 76.6 | 63.2 | 72.3 | 64.1 | 78.5 |
| 20 | 64.6 | 65.6 | 66.2 | 60.6 | 44.7 | 46.2 | 45.8 | 47.6 | 71.1 | 75 | 71.7 | 78 | 71.7 | 77.1 | 72.6 | 80.1 |
| 30 | 68.2 | 67 | 69.3 | 65.5 | 47.1 | 47.8 | 47.9 | 48.4 | 76.7 | 77 | 77.6 | 83.8 | 77.9 | 84 | 78.7 | 82.6 |
| 40 | 71.4 | 67.6 | 72 | 68.8 | 49.2 | 49.4 | 49.6 | 49.2 | 81.6 | 78 | 82.6 | 86.4 | 83.1 | 89.2 | 83.9 | 85.1 |
| 50 | 74.3 | 73 | 74.5 | 76 | 51.2 | 51 | 51.3 | 51 | 86.1 | 87 | 87.3 | 87 | 88 | 93.1 | 88.8 | 85.1 |
| 60 | 77.3 | 75.8 | 77 | 76.8 | 53.1 | 53.6 | 52.9 | 53.6 | 90.7 | 87 | 91.9 | 87.6 | 93 | 93.1 | 93.7 | 93.7 |
| 70 | 80.4 | 77.1 | 79.6 | 77.3 | 55.2 | 54.2 | 54.6 | 55.6 | 95.5 | 88.5 | 97 | 91 | 98.2 | 93.1 | 98.9 | 101.2 |
| 80 | 84.1 | 80.8 | 82.8 | 80.4 | 57.7 | 55 | 56.7 | 56.8 | 101.2 | 89 | 102.8 | 96.8 | 104.4 | 94.9 | 105 | 103.9 |
| 90 | 89.2 | 86.7 | 87.1 | 86.6 | 61.1 | 60 | 59.5 | 60.2 | 109.1 | 103 | 111 | 100.8 | 112.9 | 109.7 | 113.5 | 108.8 |

Table 6.7: Predicted quantiles sections $30,31,32,33$

| quantile | Section 30 |  |  |  | Section 31 |  |  |  | Section 32 |  |  |  | Section 33 |  |  |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
|  | pred. | $\begin{aligned} & 1 \\ & \text { emp. } \end{aligned}$ | pred. | $\begin{aligned} & 2 \\ & \text { emp. } \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{gathered} \text { dir } \\ \text { pred. } \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{aligned} & 1 \\ & \text { emp. } \end{aligned}$ | $\underset{\text { pred. }}{\frac{\mathrm{di}}{2}}$ | $\begin{aligned} & 2 \\ & \text { emp. } \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{array}{r} \text { dir } \\ \text { pred. } \end{array}$ | $\text { r } 1$ <br> emp. | $\begin{gathered} \text { di } \\ \text { pred. } \end{gathered}$ | emp. | pred. | $\begin{aligned} & 1 \\ & \text { emp. } \end{aligned}$ | $\stackrel{\text { di }}{\text { pred. }}$ | emp. |
| 10 | 60.8 | 56.3 | 65.3 | 57.4 | 60.4 | 61.2 | 63.2 | 67.2 | 40.4 | 52.1 | 46.5 | 55.2 | 53.4 | 52.7 | 57 | 58.2 |
| 20 | 63.3 | 56.3 | 66.6 | 62.1 | 65.3 | 66.5 | 67.3 | 68.9 | 49.2 | 57.5 | 53.1 | 59.2 | 58.6 | 58.1 | 61.1 | 60.9 |
| 30 | 65.1 | 57.5 | 67.5 | 62.1 | 68.9 | 68 | 70.3 | 70 | 55.5 | 59.6 | 57.9 | 62.2 | 62.4 | 60 | 64 | 64 |
| 40 | 66.7 | 61.4 | 68.3 | 63.8 | 71.9 | 70.3 | 72.9 | 73 | 60.9 | 59.6 | 62.1 | 63.9 | 65.6 | 62.7 | 66.5 | 67.4 |
| 50 | 68.1 | 65.9 | 69 | 71.8 | 74.7 | 71.9 | 75.3 | 74.4 | 65.9 | 64.2 | 65.9 | 67.4 | 68.6 | 66.2 | 68.9 | 67.4 |
| 60 | 69.6 | 69.3 | 69.7 | 74.1 | 77.5 | 73.2 | 77.7 | 77.1 | 71 | 66.7 | 69.7 | 69.3 | 71.6 | 67.6 | 71.2 | 67.4 |
| 70 | 71.1 | 69.3 | 70.5 | 74.1 | 80.6 | 74.6 | 80.3 | 79.6 | 76.4 | 69.5 | 73.8 | 71.4 | 74.8 | 71.1 | 73.7 | 71.1 |
| 80 | 73 | 87.2 | 71.4 | 79.2 | 84.1 | 76.9 | 83.3 | 83.4 | 82.7 | 79.4 | 78.7 | 73.5 | 78.5 | 73.8 | 76.6 | 71.9 |
| 90 | 75.5 | 93.2 | 72.6 | 79.2 | 89 | 84.1 | 87.4 | 87.5 | 91.5 | 83.4 | 85.3 | 77.3 | 83.7 | 81.3 | 80.7 | 75.3 |

Table 6.8: Predicted quantiles sections 34,36

| quantile | Section 34 |  |  |  | Section 36 |  |  |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
|  | dir 1 |  | dir 2 |  | dir 1 |  | dir 2 |  |
|  | pred. | emp. | pred. | emp. | pred. | emp. | pred. | emp. |
| 10 | 44.1 | 42.5 | 40.9 | 43.1 | 52 | 44.6 | 53.6 | 56.7 |
| 20 | 48.4 | 46.5 | 46.5 | 50.6 | 57.5 | 50.9 | 58.8 | 59.1 |
| 30 | 51.4 | 49.1 | 50.6 | 52.7 | 61.5 | 59.2 | 62.5 | 62.2 |
| 40 | 54 | 51.2 | 54.1 | 56.2 | 64.9 | 64.2 | 65.7 | 65.2 |
| 50 | 56.5 | 53.2 | 57.4 | 58.8 | 68 | 68.2 | 68.7 | 69.5 |
| 60 | 58.9 | 54.7 | 60.7 | 60.2 | 71.2 | 70.9 | 71.7 | 72.4 |
| 70 | 61.5 | 58 | 64.2 | 64.9 | 74.6 | 74.9 | 74.9 | 76.8 |
| 80 | 64.6 | 62.2 | 68.3 | 70.3 | 78.6 | 79.3 | 78.7 | 78.8 |
| 90 | 68.8 | 68.4 | 73.9 | 76 | 84.1 | 94.6 | 83.9 | 82.5 |

### 6.7 Jackknifed coefficients

The poor predictions, especially for the high and low quantiles, in some combinations of section and direction appear to be caused by the instability of the jackknife coefficients used for the validation.

Tables 6.9, 6.10 and 6.11 present the jackknife coefficients used for speed data validation and should be read together (the tables are only split in order to fit in the document). Each line corresponds to estimates with one section removed, except the first one that contains the estimations on the whole sample. Each column corresponds to the estimated coefficients for a specific predictor. The gray cells indicate the coefficients that are very different from the full sample equivalent.

The validation scheme used in this chapter is a variant of the jackknife method in statistics. We have discussed in details in the previous section how to compute out of sample predictors for random effects. However, the prediction of speed quantiles in a new section also requires that the model's coefficients be estimated for the validation sample. Ideally, the estimated coefficients in a given column would be stable and comparable to the estimated coefficient for the whole sample. Large differences between a coefficient estimated with one section out and with the whole sample raises concerns about that section or predictor. For example the jackknife coefficients for Z_times_SLW are very similar for all 31 sections removed and with the overall sample, whereas the coefficients for Z_times_X1_over_R appear to be off for sections $1,3,5,7,10,12$ and 30.

The sections that generate extreme jackknife coefficients are consistently the
same for all predictors. Sections $1,3,5,7,10,15,29,30,32$ and 36 generate most of the extreme jackknife coefficients. This might be an indication that these sections behave according to a different model, or that the measurement of predictors and speed data was less reliable on these sections.

Table 6.9: Jackknife coefficients 1

| $\begin{aligned} & \vec{Z} \\ & 0 \\ & .0 \\ & . \vec{U} \\ & \stackrel{\rightharpoonup}{U} \end{aligned}$ |  | $\begin{aligned} & \text { む } \\ & \underset{\sim}{\sim} \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & \text { ry } \\ & 0 \\ & 0 \\ & 0 \\ & 0 \\ & 0 \\ & 0 \\ & 0 \\ & 0 \\ & \vdots \\ & N \end{aligned}$ |  | $\begin{aligned} & \approx \\ & 0 \\ & 0 \\ & 0 \\ & 0 \\ & 0 \\ & \# \\ & H \\ & N \end{aligned}$ |  |  | $\begin{aligned} & \tilde{0} \\ & 0 \\ & 0 \\ & \ddot{Z} \\ & \underset{\sim}{n} \end{aligned}$ |  |  | $$ |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| none | 79.34 | 10.99 | -134.12 | -2.82 | -1.27 | -0.13 | -2.34 | 1.38 | -3.14 | -1.44 | -14.4 | 11.94 |
| 1 | 79.8 | 6.88 | -64.43 | -1.63 | -1.89 | -0.05 | -1.92 | 1.51 | -2.22 | -1.85 | -15.11 | 11.13 |
| 3 | 79.52 | 19.35 | -88.29 | -2.19 | -1.68 | -0.22 | -2.3 | 1.62 | -2.5 | -1.91 | -13.44 | 12.7 |
| 5 | 79.49 | 16.02 | -88.36 | -1.97 | -1.68 | -0.27 | -2.49 | 1.92 | -2.47 | -1.26 | -13.96 | 12.36 |
| 7 | 79.22 | 10.67 | -94.03 | -2.64 | -0.44 | -0.03 | -2.23 | 1.7 | -3.01 | -0.85 | -14.5 | 12.06 |
| 8 | 79.1 | 11.27 | -143.02 | -2.77 | -1.16 | -0.12 | -2.33 | 1.46 | -3.1 | -1.35 | -14.4 | 11.97 |
| 9 | 79.31 | 10.92 | -135.47 | -2.78 | -1.21 | -0.11 | -2.31 | 1.36 | -3.2 | -1.54 | -14.39 | 11.94 |
| 10 | 79.21 | 20.94 | -92.76 | -2.04 | -1.32 | -0.33 | -2.68 | 1.99 | -2.28 | -1.52 | -13.87 | 12.32 |
| 11 | 79.54 | 11.26 | -133.6 | -2.89 | -1.27 | 0.02 | -2.28 | 1.12 | -3.28 | -1.53 | -14.4 | 11.94 |
| 12 | 79.29 | 6.79 | -108.67 | -2.98 | -1.62 | 0.18 | -2.53 | 0.72 | -3.54 | -1.88 | -14.43 | 11.86 |
| 13 | 79.34 | 11.01 | -129.85 | -2.82 | -1.33 | -0.17 | -2.34 | 1.46 | -3.12 | -1.51 | -14.36 | 11.96 |
| 14 | 79.12 | 12.74 | -133.41 | -2.65 | -1.15 | -0.09 | -2.07 | 1.39 | -3.3 | -1.5 | -14.31 | 11.97 |
| 15 | 79.23 | 10.55 | -146.97 | -2.43 | -1.03 | -0.21 | -5.05 | 1.74 | -3.1 | -1.55 | -14.62 | 11.69 |
| 16 | 79.12 | 13.2 | -137.08 | -2.85 | -1.41 | -0.12 | -2.14 | 1.49 | -3.16 | -1.55 | -14.31 | 12.03 |
| 17 | 79.23 | 11.44 | -132.53 | -2.77 | -1.05 | -0.18 | -2.3 | 1.19 | -3.23 | -1.31 | -14.45 | 11.89 |
| 18 | 79.68 | 11.87 | -139.33 | -2.71 | -1.21 | -0.12 | -2.33 | 1.47 | -3.09 | -1.38 | -14.43 | 11.92 |
| 20 | 78.41 | 9.39 | -135.25 | -2.76 | -1.1 | -0.2 | -2.15 | 1.43 | -3.13 | -1.39 | -14.48 | 11.87 |
| 21 | 78.72 | 9.76 | -134.22 | -3 | -1.45 | -0.02 | -2.45 | 1.02 | -3.29 | -1.64 | -14.4 | 11.93 |
| 22 | 79.33 | 9.46 | -127.27 | -2.74 | -1.03 | -0.14 | -2.37 | 1.3 | -3.26 | -1.47 | -14.47 | 11.89 |
| 23 | 80.42 | 12.08 | -127.73 | -2.42 | -1.13 | -0.27 | -2.52 | 2.29 | -2.72 | -1.24 | -14.47 | 11.8 |
| 24 | 79.34 | 10.84 | -134.9 | -2.83 | -1.14 | -0.14 | -2.35 | 1.55 | -3.05 | -1.4 | -14.46 | 11.91 |
| 25 | 79.74 | 11.12 | -129.57 | -2.94 | -1.63 | -0.06 | -2.53 | 1.1 | -3.25 | -1.74 | -14.43 | 11.85 |
| 26 | 79.59 | 10.6 | -133.18 | -2.97 | -1.19 | -0.12 | -2.44 | 1.44 | -2.98 | -1.46 | -14.46 | 11.9 |
| 27 | 79.48 | 11.05 | -135.3 | -2.84 | -1.3 | -0.12 | -2.31 | 1.3 | -3.16 | -1.46 | -14.38 | 11.97 |
| 28 | 79.09 | 8.72 | -123.17 | -2.94 | -1.45 | -0.08 | -1.68 | 1.2 | -3.36 | -1.79 | -14.4 | 11.86 |
| 29 | 78.94 | 12.35 | -137.62 | -2.58 | -1.15 | -0.36 | -1.98 | 2.02 | -2.9 | -1.15 | -13.95 | 12.32 |
| 30 | 79.37 | 7.44 | -73.32 | -4.76 | -2.23 | -0.32 | -2.1 | -2.06 | -4.79 | -2.25 | -14.3 | 11.95 |
| 31 | 79.52 | 11.39 | -135.74 | -2.64 | -1.36 | -0.11 | -2.25 | 1.33 | -3.29 | -1.41 | -14.35 | 11.99 |
| 32 | 79.47 | 11.94 | -97.53 | -3.01 | -1.06 | 0.17 | -1.42 | 4.08 | -3.45 | -1.14 | -14.34 | 11.94 |
| 33 | 79.78 | 11.29 | -134.52 | -2.81 | -1.33 | -0.12 | -2.39 | 1.31 | -3.23 | -1.44 | -14.41 | 11.93 |
| 34 | 79.34 | 11.06 | -134.27 | -2.84 | -1.3 | -0.12 | -2.31 | 1.4 | -3.17 | -1.45 | -14.38 | 11.97 |
| 36 | 79.4 | 13.11 | -129.52 | -3 | -1.58 | -0.16 | -2.65 | -0.03 | -2.05 | -0.28 | -14.39 | 11.85 |

Table 6.10: Jackknife coefficients 2

|  |  |  | $\begin{aligned} & \text { N } \\ & 0 \\ & 0 \\ & 0 \\ & 0 \\ & \text { B } \\ & \text { N } \end{aligned}$ |  |  |  |  |  | $\begin{aligned} & \pi \\ & 0 \\ & 0 \\ & 0 \\ & \# \\ & \underset{N}{N} \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & \text { B } \\ & \text { W } \\ & \text { g } \\ & \text { N } \end{aligned}$ |  |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| none | -1.37 | 0.15 | 1 | -2.8 | -2.4 | 3.99 | -3.3 | -4.21 | 5.58 | -1.84 | -3.38 | 0.22 |
| 1 | -1.08 | 0.13 | 0.9 | -2.78 | -2.18 | 4.97 | -6.59 | -2.31 | 2.19 | 0 | -4.93 | 0.29 |
| 3 | -1.06 | 0.14 | 0.94 | -2.88 | -1.93 | 0.88 | -2.98 | -2.18 | 2.07 | -3.71 | -2.27 | 0.19 |
| 5 | -0.8 | 0.13 | 0.99 | -3.17 | -2.11 | 5.87 | -3.27 | -5.08 | 7.46 | -3.59 | -1.48 | 0.03 |
| 7 | -1.02 | 0.17 | 1.08 | -3.07 | -2.65 | 4.68 | -3.66 | -4.71 | 5.09 | -2.3 | -3.39 | 0.03 |
| 8 | -1.32 | 0.15 | 1.01 | -2.84 | -2.41 | 4.01 | -3.35 | -4.31 | 5.58 | -1.97 | -3.29 | 0.2 |
| 9 | -1.3 | 0.15 | 1.01 | -2.85 | -2.46 | 3.96 | -3.34 | -4.19 | 5.53 | -1.77 | -3.47 | 0.21 |
| 10 | -1.08 | 0.13 | 0.95 | -2.95 | -1.78 | 1.46 | -3.2 | -5.1 | 7.57 | -3.83 | -1.94 | 0.06 |
| 11 | -1.43 | 0.15 | 1.04 | -2.83 | -2.55 | 4 | -3.26 | -4.13 | 5.43 | -1.84 | -3.3 | 0.21 |
| 12 | -1.69 | 0.14 | 1.14 | -3.38 | -3.15 | 3.95 | -3.81 | -3.85 | 4.87 | -0.2 | -3.53 | 0.47 |
| 13 | -1.58 | 0.15 | 1.02 | -2.84 | -2.44 | 3.92 | -3.45 | -4.21 | 5.6 | -1.78 | -3.35 | 0.3 |
| 14 | -1.34 | 0.15 | 1.1 | -2.95 | -2.67 | 3.95 | -3.57 | -4.19 | 5.56 | -2.42 | -3.12 | 0.18 |
| 15 | -0.71 | 0.16 | 0.96 | -0.79 | -2.36 | 4.4 | -3.3 | -6.53 | 10.16 | -1.69 | -3.82 | 0.04 |
| 16 | -1.65 | 0.14 | 0.96 | -2.64 | -2.67 | 3.84 | -2.89 | -4.03 | 5.24 | -2.17 | -2.87 | 0.24 |
| 17 | -1.24 | 0.16 | 1.09 | -2.95 | -2.27 | 4.24 | -3.65 | -4.29 | 5.74 | -2.33 | -3.79 | 0.24 |
| 18 | -1.28 | 0.15 | 1.03 | -2.92 | -2.37 | 3.92 | -3.52 | -4.2 | 5.55 | -2.11 | -3.24 | 0.2 |
| 20 | -1.01 | 0.16 | 0.98 | -3.15 | -2.14 | 4.29 | -3.32 | -4.11 | 5.35 | -1.66 | -3.9 | 0.12 |
| 21 | -1.51 | 0.14 | 0.98 | -2.77 | -2.48 | 3.95 | -3.13 | -4.16 | 5.55 | -1.29 | -3.77 | 0.35 |
| 22 | -1.13 | 0.16 | 1.06 | -2.88 | -2.36 | 4.35 | -3.47 | -4.34 | 5.84 | -1.68 | -3.84 | 0.14 |
| 23 | -1.13 | 0.17 | 1.02 | -2.97 | -2.26 | 4.24 | -3.79 | -4.61 | 6.5 | -2.71 | -2.7 | -0.02 |
| 24 | -1.27 | 0.15 | 1 | -2.8 | -2.3 | 4.11 | -3.37 | -4.29 | 5.74 | -1.93 | -3.41 | 0.15 |
| 25 | -1.48 | 0.14 | 1.02 | -3.03 | -2.48 | 3.73 | -3.32 | -4.02 | 5.37 | -1.44 | -3.19 | 0.31 |
| 26 | -1.43 | 0.15 | 1 | -2.76 | -2.28 | 4.1 | -3.31 | -4.29 | 5.72 | -1.77 | -3.49 | 0.19 |
| 27 | -1.38 | 0.15 | 1 | -2.78 | -2.4 | 3.93 | -3.23 | -4.21 | 5.58 | -1.82 | -3.34 | 0.22 |
| 28 | -1.51 | 0.15 | 0.97 | -3.7 | -2.71 | 4.26 | -2.92 | -3.31 | 3.79 | -0.92 | -3.74 | 0.27 |
| 29 | -1.13 | 0.18 | 1.03 | -2.32 | -2.13 | 3.73 | -3.47 | -5.64 | 8.62 | -3.35 | -2.69 | 0.01 |
| 30 | -1.27 | 0.11 | 0.91 | -2.29 | -1.96 | 3.72 | 0.68 | -3.31 | 4.14 | 0.31 | -3.74 | 0.17 |
| 31 | -1.26 | 0.15 | 1 | -2.84 | -2.54 | 3.87 | -3.22 | -4.15 | 5.45 | -1.9 | -3.15 | 0.21 |
| 32 | -1.49 | 0.17 | 0.98 | -2.49 | -2.73 | 4.19 | -5.47 | -4.23 | 5.63 | -2.92 | -4.5 | 0.45 |
| 33 | -1.48 | 0.15 | 0.99 | -2.79 | -2.37 | 3.94 | -3.2 | -4.16 | 5.49 | -1.83 | -3.33 | 0.25 |
| 34 | -1.37 | 0.15 | 1 | -2.78 | -2.41 | 3.93 | -3.22 | -4.21 | 5.58 | -1.82 | -3.33 | 0.22 |
| 36 | -2.26 | 0.18 | 0.74 | -2.19 | -1.97 | 4.17 | -1.77 | -4.46 | 6.07 | -3.25 | -3.48 | 0.58 |

Table 6.11: Jackknife coefficients 3

|  | $\begin{aligned} & \text { U } \\ & \\ & \\ & 0 \\ & 0 \\ & \text { N} \\ & N \end{aligned}$ |  |  |  |  |  | $\begin{aligned} & \text { H } \\ & \text { H } \\ & 0 \\ & \ddot{x} \end{aligned}$ | $\underset{\sim}{\nabla}$ |  |  |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| none | 0.09 | 0.11 | -0.11 | -1.99 | 0.73 | 1.63 | -1949.12 | -7.6 | -2.53 | 3.74 | 0.4 |
| 1 | 0.09 | -0.11 | -0.12 | -4.32 | -0.31 | -0.34 | -2044.73 | -7.79 | -0.76 | 0.61 | 1.11 |
| 3 | 0.12 | 0.07 | -0.06 | -0.48 | 0.51 | 1.99 | -1985.25 | -7.67 | 1.09 | -3.04 | 0.45 |
| 5 | 0.09 | 0.05 | -0.1 | -0.73 | 0.33 | . 81 | -1979.94 | -7.66 | -3.49 | 5.8 | 0.37 |
| 7 | -0.07 | 0.06 | -0.2 | -3.5 | 0.73 | 1.65 | -2280.23 | -7.56 | -2.91 | 3.48 | 0.43 |
| 8 | 0.08 | 0.11 | -0.12 | -2.04 | 0.72 | 1.64 | -1899.47 | -7.51 | -2.63 | 3.77 | 0.42 |
| 9 | 0.1 | 0.1 | -0.11 | -1.9 | 0.73 | 1.67 | -1946.11 | -7.59 | -2.55 | 3.75 | 0.37 |
| 10 | 0.15 | 0.09 | -0.09 | -0.12 | 0.31 | 1.71 | -1216.14 | -7.56 | -3.61 | 5.92 | 0.47 |
| 11 | 0.09 | 0.09 | -0.1 | -2.29 | 0.75 | 1.9 | -1990.04 | -7.68 | -2.39 | 3.47 | 0.48 |
| 12 | 0.08 | 0.21 | -0.07 | -2.21 | 0.57 | 1.26 | -1939.59 | -7.59 | -2.44 | 3.6 | 0.4 |
| 13 | 0.09 | 0.12 | -0.1 | -1.6 | 0.69 | 1.68 | -1948.84 | -7.6 | -2.56 | 3.8 | 0.44 |
| 14 | 0.11 | 0.05 | -0.09 | -1.72 | 0.73 | 2.29 | -1904.54 | -7.52 | -2.65 | 3.93 | 0.62 |
| 15 | 0.08 | 0.1 | -0.19 | -1.8 | 0.69 | 0.74 | -1925.73 | -7.56 | -0.37 | -0.63 | -0.22 |
| 16 | 0.09 | 0.09 | -0.07 | -1.47 | 0.75 | 1.97 | -1904.2 | -7.52 | -2.41 | 3.52 | 0.37 |
| 17 | 0.09 | 0.11 | -0.13 | -2.14 | 0.77 | 2.02 | -1927.38 | -7.56 | -2.61 | 3.9 | 0.57 |
| 18 | 0.09 | 0.09 | -0.12 | -1.98 | 0.68 | 1.73 | -2019.71 | -7.73 | -2.57 | 3.81 | 0.52 |
| 20 | 0.08 | 0.11 | -0.16 | -2.3 | 0.8 | 1.28 | -1758.79 | -7.25 | -2.97 | 4.6 | 0.18 |
| 21 | 0.09 | 0.13 | -0.11 | -2.22 | 0.76 | 1.53 | -1821.74 | -7.37 | -2.51 | 3.78 | 0.29 |
| 22 | 0.08 | 0.11 | -0.15 | -2.2 | 0.78 | 1.52 | -1947.73 | -7.6 | -2.57 | 3.83 | 0.23 |
| 23 | 0.08 | 0.12 | -0.14 | -1.77 | 0.64 | 1.13 | -2171.51 | -8.02 | -2.91 | 4.65 | 0.46 |
| 24 | 0.08 | 0.09 | -0.13 | -2.11 | 0.75 | 1.6 | -1948.27 | -7.6 | -2.52 | 3.73 | 0.37 |
| 25 | 0.09 | 0.13 | -0.09 | -1.88 | 0.69 | 1.7 | -2031.33 | -7.76 | -2.36 | 3.58 | 0.46 |
| 26 | 0.08 | 0.11 | -0.12 | -2.05 | 0.74 | 1.52 | -1999.88 | -7.7 | -2.43 | 3.56 | 0.31 |
| 27 | 0.09 | 0.11 | -0.11 | -1.97 | 0.79 | 1.72 | -1978.23 | -8.74 | -2.54 | 3.75 | 0.41 |
| 28 | 0.09 | 0.16 | -0.11 | -1.76 | 0.79 | 1.16 | -1898.56 | -7.51 | -3.29 | 5.25 | -0.06 |
| 29 | 0.09 | 0.07 | -0.1 | -1.72 | 0.92 | 2.26 | -1866.59 | -7.45 | -3.64 | 6.13 | 0.81 |
| 30 | 0.1 | 0.09 | -0.05 | -2.15 | 2.39 | 5.53 | -1956.46 | -7.57 | -1.52 | 2.04 | 0.52 |
| 31 | 0.09 | 0.12 | -0.1 | -1.99 | 0.72 | 1.68 | -1986.33 | -7.67 | -2.64 | 3.95 | 0.46 |
| 32 | 0.08 | -0.13 | -0.1 | -4.06 | 0.22 | 1.37 | -1976.37 | -7.45 | -2.66 | 4.04 | 1.26 |
| 33 | 0.09 | 0.13 | -0.11 | -1.94 | 0.74 | 1.69 | -2040.42 | -7.77 | -2.46 | 3.61 | 0.43 |
| 34 | 0.09 | 0.11 | -0.11 | -2 | 0.68 | 1.72 | -1949.95 | -7.68 | -2.54 | 3.75 | 0.42 |
| 36 | 0.13 | 0.33 | -0.12 | -3.14 | 1.11 | 1.71 | -1961.17 | -7.54 | -2.86 | 4.3 | 0.93 |

### 6.8 Conclusions

In this chapter we have explored methods to predict speed distributions using mixed linear models.

The difficulties of making prediction were twofold. First we are using a model with random effects and predictions for new road sections require some way to predict these random effects. Second, we are using normal quantiles of the dependent variables to build more predictors, effectively making out-of-sample predictions of random effects more difficult.

We have discussed that it was necessary to observe at least some speed data in the section for which decile predictions were computed. To overcome the problem created by the use of normal quantiles in the calculation of residuals, we proposed the use of a simple auxiliary model. We have shown how to set the relationship between this auxiliary model and the full actual model used in prediction in order to derive the best linear unbiased predictor (BLUP) in this context. We observed that this method was not performing well when used to make random effect predictions for a model that ignored the sampling design of the data, but turned out to be very precise when the full sampling sampling design was accounted for in the model.

The other part that was required to validate the model are the coefficients associated with the variables in the model. We have seen that their estimation was roughly stable except for some variables that generated more extreme coefficients for some sections. The sections with extreme coefficients were consistently the same for all the affected variables.

By applying a jackknife technique we obtained some interesting results. Some road sections were predicted satisfactorily. The sections that presented large errors in the prediction of random effect were mostly affected by errors in the coefficients of the model. Some sections appeared to have a disproportionate effect on the model, suggesting that they should be modeled in a different way.

## Chapter 7: Conclusions

### 7.1 Summary

This dissertation has proposed econometric techniques to model decisions that involve both discrete and continuous dependent variables and a mixed linear model that accounts for the survey design. Procedures to apply these models in a predictive context have been formulated and applied to simulated data and real case studies.

Probit and ordered probit are estimated jointly with linear regression by correlating the error terms, that are assumed to follow a multivariate normal distribution. It has been shown that the existence of a closed form for the choice probability of ordered models makes them much more stable numerically. On the other hand, the calculation of choices probabilities in the probit model, that involves the integration of multivariate normal probabilities, has resulted to be challenging. A method, first suggested by Genz, has proved to greatly reduce the simulation error compared to a naive Monte-Carlo approach, to be more stable and generally more suited for the problem. There are still, however, several limitations to the use of such models, notably the long computation time and the numerical instability.

Discrete models are peculiar to use for predictions because they only produce choice probabilities. In a cross-validation scheme actual choices have been compared
to predicted probabilities. Market shares of alternatives are taken into account when looking at predicted probabilities, mostly because it is very hard to predict a choice that has a very low occurrence. It was found that both discrete-continuous models only improves marginally the predictive power of vehicle ownership and use models estimated on 2009 NHTS data, and that ordered models appear to have a slightly better predicting power. However, results obtained on simulated data attest that improvements that these models offer can be significant when high correlation exists between the continuous and the discrete variables.

The second part of this dissertation reviewed the use of linear mixed models in the context of free-flow speed distribution estimation. Random effect models offer the possibility to account for the sampling design of our data, that contain multiple observations for the same direction, road and section. A variable selection methods based on BIC has been used to select the final model specification. Among the results obtained, it was found that there is no contribution from the road to freeflow speed and that instead only road sections have an impact, that is sometimes very high. The two directions on a road section do have an impact on speeds, although this is more limited.

Finally, a method to predict the distribution of free-flow speeds on new road sections is offered. An auxiliary model that deals with the unavailability of certain predictors in the validation sample is used to predict the value of the random effects. The methods was successfully applied to speed distribution predictions on most of the road sections in our sample, although significant errors were calculated in a limited number of other sections. A jackknife based analysis has shown that
predictor coefficients are likely the cause of this problem, as some road sections have a disproportionate impact on them.

### 7.2 Contributions

The major contributions from this dissertation can be summarized as follows:

- Models for dependent variables that do not belong to the same family are emerging in the transportation literature and related fields (i.e. marketing, economics). This thesis has offered a theoretical framework, computational tools and numerical results for discrete-continuous models.
- The discrete-continuous models have been not only estimated but also validated to measure their ability to reproduce choice probabilities in validation samples.
- The discrete-continuous models have been applied in the context of car ownership and use, which is a very relevant subject in our societies that are highly dependent on cars and fossil fuel. The models proposed here can be used to calculate energy consumption from private transportation and Greenhouse Gas Emissions. The models are general and can be applied in different contexts and in different disciplines.
- The Random Effect model for free-flow speed distribution represents a significant step in the ability to understand, model and transfer operational speed measurements. This method was suggested by several analysts, but never fully
explored in this context. Moreover, the transferability study offers the possibility to reduce cost associated with data collection and to extend on a large scale the results obtained.
- The techniques developed in this thesis are highly multi-disciplinary. Elements from statistics, econometrics, optimization, survey design and transportation have been assembled to produce these results.


### 7.3 Future work

There any many questions left unanswered in this document.
The unordered discrete-continuous model suffers from numerical problems in estimation. The application of more advanced optimization procedures should be investigated to solve numerical instability and to compute standard errors for model parameters. The discrete-continuous models can be further expanded to take into account heterogeneity in the form of latent classes or random parameters. Although these extensions are possible, the numerical problems and the long computation time might prevent practical applications. The proposed models are general and can be applied to several transportation problems that include discrete and continuous decision variables: activity type and duration; number of trips and distance traveled, departure time and trip duration.

Model selection is just partially addressed in this dissertation; other methods than BIC could be implemented and their effectiveness explored with respect to model fit and model prediction. One problem that has not been studied is the
incorporation of sampling weights in the analysis, which would make inferences to the whole population more robust. The modeling approach for free-flow speed has proved to be useful, but more validation is needed in order to make the coefficients of the model robust. This may involve the use of mixture of models. Finally, more realistic validation runs can be performed by collecting a handful of observations on new roads.

## Bibliography

[AYEMM14] S. Anowar, S. Yasmin, N. Eluru, and L. Miranda-Moreno. Analyzing car ownership in Quebec City: a comparison of traditional and latent class ordered and unordered models. Transportation, 41(5):1013-1039, 2014.
$\left[B^{+} S^{+} 14\right]$ C.R. Bhat, S. Astroza, R. Sidharthan, M. Jobair Bin Alam, and W.H. Khushefati. A joint count-continuous model of travel behavior with selection based on a multinomial probit residential density choice model. Transportation Research Part B, 68:31-51, 2014.
[BBA01] J.L. Bowman and M.E. Ben-Akiva. Activity-based disaggregate travel demand model system with activity schedules. Transportation Research Part A, 31:1-28, 2001.
[BCMnt] M. Bassani, C. Cirillo, and J.M. Molinari, S.and Tremblay. Random effect models to predict operating speed distribution on rural two-lane highways. Journal of Transportation Engineering, 0:0, in print.
[BCMV05] A.M. Bento, M.L. Cropper, A.M. Mobarak, and K. Vinha. The impact of urban spatial structure on travel demand in the United States. Review of Economics and Statistics, 87:466-478, 2005.
[BDMC14] M. Bassani, D. Dalmazzo, G. Marinelli, and C. Cirillo. The effects of road geometrics and traffic regulations on driver-preferred speeds in northern Italy. An exploratory analysis. Transportation Research Part F, 25:10-26, 2014.
[Bha05] C.R. Bhat. A multiple discrete-continuous extreme value model: Formulation and application to discretionary time-use decisions. Transportation Research Part B, 39(8):679-707, 2005.
[Bha11] C.R. Bhat. The maximum approximate composite marginal likelihood (MACML) estimation of multinomial probit-based unordered response choice models. Transportation Research Part B, 45(7):923-939, 2011.
[Bha15] C.R. Bhat. A new generalized heterogeneous data model (GHDM) to jointly model mixed types of dependent variables. Transportation Research Part B, forthcoming:0, 2015.
[BK90] D.S. Bunch and R. Kitamura. Multinomial probit model estimation revisited: testing estimable model specifications, maximum likelihood algorithms and probit integral approximations for trinomial models of car ownership. Technical report, Institute of Transportation Studies Technical Report, University of California, Davis, CA, 1990.
[BK93] C.R. Bhat and F.S. Koppelman. An endogenous switching simultaneous equation system of employment, income, and car ownership. Transportation Research Part a-Policy and Practice, 27:447-459, 1993.
[BM13] M. Bassani and G. Mutani. Effects of environmental lighting conditions on operating speeds on urban arterials. Transportation Research Record: Journal of the Transportation Research Board, 2298:78-87, 2013.
[BMBW15] D. Bates, M. Maechler, B. Bolker, and S. Walker. lme4: Linear mixedeffects models using Eigen and S4, 2015. R package version 1.1-9.
[Bon01] J.A. Bonneson. Controls for horizontal curve design. Transportation Research Record: Journal of the Transportation Research Board, 1751:82-89, 2001.
[BP98] C.R. Bhat and V. Pulugurta. A comparison of two alternative behavioral choice mechanisms for household auto ownership decisions. Transportation Research Part B, 32(1):61-75, 1998.
[BPPL13] C.R. Bhat, R. Paleti, R.M. Pendyala, and K.C. Lorenzini, K and. Konduri. Accommodating immigration status and self selection effects in a joint model of household auto ownership and residential location choice. Transportation Research Record, 2382:142-150, 2013.
[BS06] C.R. Bhat and S. Sen. Household vehicle type holdings and usage: an application of the multiple discrete-continuous extreme value (MDCEV) model. Transportation Research Part B, 40:35-53, 2006.
[BSE09] C.R. Bhat, S. Sen, and N. Eluru. The impact of demographics, built environment attributes, vehicle characteristics, and gasoline prices on household vehicle holdings and use. Transportation Research Part B, 43(1):1-18, 2009.
[Chu02] Y.B. Chu. Automobile ownership analysis using ordered probit models. travel demand and land use. Planning and Administration, 2002:60-67, 2002.
[CJM12] J.Y.J. Chow, R. Jayakrishnan, and H. Mahamassani. Is transport modeling education too multi-disciplinary? a manifesto on the search for its evolving identity, 2012.
[CLT16] C. Cirillo, Y. Liu, and J.M. Tremblay. Simulation, numerical approximation and closed forms for joint discrete continuous models with an application to household vehicle ownership and use. Transportation, 2016.
[CMH07] X.Y. Cao, P.L. Mokhtarian, and S.L. Handy. Cross-sectional and quasi-panel explorations of the connection between the built environment and auto ownership. Environment and Planning A, 39:830-847, 2007.
[CVC88] P. Capéraà and B. Van Cutsem. Méthodes et modèles en statistique non paramétrique exposé fondamental. Presses de l'Université Laval, Paris, France, first edition, 1988.
[CXB16] C. Cirillo, R. Xu, and F. Bastin. A dynamic formulation for car ownership modeling. Transportation Science, 50(1):322-335, 2016.
[DBS77] C. Daganzo, F. Bouthelier, and Y. Sheffi. Multinomial probit and qualitative choice: A computationally efficient algorithm. Transportation Science, 11:338-358, 1977.
[DG97] J. Dargay and D. Gately. Vehicle ownership to 2015: Implications for energy use and emissions. Energy Policy, 25:1121-1127, 1997.
[dJ89a] G.C. de Jong. Simulating car cost changes using an indirect utility model of car ownership and car use; PTRC SAM, Brighton, 1989.
[dJ89b] G.C. de Jong. Some joint models of car ownership and car use; Ph.D. thesis. Faculty of Economic Science and Econometrics, University of Amsterdam, 1989.
[dJ91] G.C. de Jong. An indirect utility model of car ownership and car use. European Economic Review, 34(5):971-985, 1991.
[dJ96] G.C de Jong. A disaggregate model system of vehicle holding duration, type choice and use. Transportation Research Part B, 30:263-276, 1996.
[DM84] J.A. Dubin and D.L. McFadden. An econometric analysis of residential electric appliance holdings and consumption. Econometrica, 52(2):345-362, 1984.
[ET93] B. Efron and R.J. Tibshirani. An Introduction to the Bootstrap. Chapman et Hall, 1993.
[Fan80] H.A. Fang. A discretecontinuous model of households vehicle choice and usage, with an application to the effects of residential density. Transportation Research Part B, 42:736-758, 1980.
[GDH04] P. Goodwin, J. Dargay, and M. Hanly. Elasticities of road traffic and fuel consumption with respect to price and income: A review. Transport Reviews, 24(3):275-292, 2004.
[Gek89] J. Gekewe. Bayesian inference in econometric models using Monte Carlo integration. Econometrica, 57:1317-1339, 1989.
[Gen92] A. Genz. Numerical computation of multivariate normal probabilities. Journal of computational and graphical statistics, 1(2):141-149, 1992.
[Gew96] J Geweke. Monte-Carlo simulation and numerical integration, pages 731-800. Handbook of Computational Economics. Elsevier Science, Amsterdam, 1996.
[Gol90] T.F. Golob. The dynamics of household travel time expenditures and car ownership decisions. Transportation Research Part a-Policy and Practice, 24:443-463, 1990.
[GV89] T.F. Golob and L. Vanwissen. A joint household travel distance generation and car ownership model. Transportation Research Part BMethodological, 23:471-491, 1989.
[Han84] W.M. Hanemann. Discrete continuous models of consumer demand. Econometrica, 52:541-561, 1984.
[Has04] Y. Hassan. Highway design consistency: Refining the state of knowledge and practice. Transportation Research Record: Journal of the Transportation Research Board, 1881:63-71, 2004.
[HBSM92] D.A. Hensher, P.O. Barnard, N.C. Smith, and F.W. Milthorpe. Dimensions of automobile demand; a longitudinal study of automobile ownership and use. North-Holland, Amsterdam, 1992.
[HD00] M. Hanly and J.M. Dargay. Car ownership in Great Britain - panel data analysis. activity pattern analysis and exploration: Travel behavior analysis and modeling. Planning and Administration, -99:83-89, 2000.
[HKT01] Y. Hayashi, H. Kato, and R.V.R. Teodoro. A model system for the assessment of the effects of car and fuel green taxes on $\mathrm{CO}_{2}$ emission. Transportation Research Part D: Transport and Environment, 6:123139, 2001.
[HM98] V. Hajivassiliou and D. McFadden. The method of simulated scores for the estimation of LDV models. Econometrica, 66:863-896, 1998.
[HMR96] V. Hajivassiliou, D. McFadden, and P. Rudd. Simulation of multivariate normal rectangle probabilities and their derivatives: Theoretical and computational results. Journal of Econometrics, 72:85-134, 1996.
[HSD82] J. Horowitz, J. Sparmann, and C. Daganzo. An investigation of the accuracy of the Clark approximation for the multinomial probit model. Transportation Science, 16:382-401, 1982.
[KB92] R. Kitamura and D.S. Bunch. Heterogeneity and state dependence in household car ownership: A panel analysis using ordered-response probit models with error components. Elsevier, Amsterdam, 1992.
[Ker91] E.M. Keramidas, editor. Efficient simulation from the multivariate normal and Student-t distributions subject to linear constraints. Fairfax: Interface Foundation of North America, Inc., 1991.
[KGYW99] R. Kitamura, T.F. Golob, T. Yamamoto, and G. Wu. Accessibility and auto use in a motorized metropolis. In UC Irvine: Center for Activity Systems Analysis, 1999.
[Kit87] R. Kitamura. A panel analysis of household car ownership and mobility, infrastructure planning and management. In In Proceedings of the Japan Society of Civil Engineers, pages 13-27, 1987.
[KK04] H.S. Kim and E. Kim. Effects of public transit on automobile ownership and use in households of the usa. In RURDS-The Applied Regional Science Conference, page 245262, 2004.
[Lit13] T. Litman. Understanding transport demands and elasticities: How prices and other factors affect travel behavior. Technical report, Victoria Transport Policy Institute, 2013. pp. 1-76.
[LLM11] S. Li, J. Linn, and E. Muehlegger. Gasoline taxes and consumer behavior. Stanford University, 2011.
[LTC14] Y. Liu, J.M. Tremblay, and C. Cirillo. An integrated model for discrete and continuous decisions with application to vehicle ownership, type and usage choices. Transportation Research Part A, 69:319-328, 2014.
[McF89] D. McFadden. A method of simulated moments for estimation of discrete response models without numerical integration. Econometrica, 57:995-1026, 1989.
[MFT05] A. Medina Figueroa and A.P. Tarko. Speed factors on two-lane rural highways in free-flow conditions. Transportation Research Record: Journal of the Transportation Research Board, 1912:39-46, 2005.
[MM81] C. Manski and D. McFadden, editors. Manski, C. and Lerman, S., pages 305-319. Structural Analysis of Discrete Data with Econometric Applications. MIT Press, Cambridge, MA, 1981.
[MSN08] C.E. McCulloch, S.R. Searle, and J.M. Neuhaus. Generalized, Linear, and Mixed Models. John Wiley \& Sons, Hoboken, New-Jersey, second edition, 2008.
[MW85] F. Mannering and C. Winston. A dynamic empirical-analysis of household vehicle ownership and utilization. Rand Journal of Economics, 16:215-236, 1985.
[PB13] R. Paleti and C.R. Bhat. Integrated model of residential location, work location, vehicle ownership, and commute tour characteristics. Transportation Research Record, 2382:162-172, 2013.
[PK08] D. Potoglou and P.S. Kanaroglo. Modelling car ownership in urban areas: a case study of Hamilton, Canada. Journal of Transport Geography, 16:42-54, 2008.
[Pur94] L.C. Purvis. Using census public use micro data sample to estimate demographic and automobile ownership models. Transportation Research Record, 1443:21-30, 1994.
[R C15] R Core Team. R: A Language and Environment for Statistical Computing. R Foundation for Statistical Computing, Vienna, Austria, 2015.
[RAM05] P.E. Rossi, G.M. Allenby, and R.E. McCulloch. Bayesian statistics and marketing. Number vol. 13 in Wiley series in probability and statistics. Wiley, 2005.
[RCM09] M.J. Roorda, J.A. Carrasco, and E.J. Miller. An integrated model of vehicle transactions, activity scheduling and mode choice. Transportation Research Part B-Methodological, 43:217-229, 2009.
[RH99] J. Ryan and G. Han. Vehicle-ownership model using family structure and accessibility application to honolulu, hawaii. Transportation Research Record: Journal of the Transportation Research Board, 1676:110, 1999.
[Sch78] G. Schwarz. Estimating the dimension of a model. Annals of Statistics, 6:461-464, 1978.
[SK12] E. Shay and A.J. Khattak. Household travel decision chains: Residential environment, automobile ownership, trips and mode choice. International Journal of Sustainable Transportation, 6:88-110, 2012.
[SW09] S. Srinivasan and J. Walker. Vehicle ownership and mode use: the challenge of sustainability. Transportation, 36:367-370, 2009.
[TPH13] A. Texeira-Pinto and J. Harezlak. Factorization and latent variable models for joint analysis of binary and continuous outcomes, pages 81-91. Analysis of Mixed Data: Methods \& Applications. CRC Press, Taylor \& Francis Group, Boca Raton, FL, 2013.
[Tra86] K.E. Train. Qualitative choice analysis: Theory, econometrics and an application to automobile demand. The MIT press, Cambridge, Massachusetts, first edition, 1986.
[TRA99] TRACE: Elasticity Handbook: Elasticities for Prototypical Contexts, European Commission, Directorate-General for Transport, 1999. www.transport-research.info/Upload/Documents/200310/trace.pdf.
[Tra03] Transportation Research Board of the National Academies. Design Speed, Operating Speed, and Posted Speed Practices, number 504 in National Cooperative Highway Research Program, Washington, D.C., 2003.
[Tra09] K.E. Train. Discrete Choice Methods with Simulation. Cambridge University Press, Cambridge, England, second edition, 2009.
[Tra11] Transportation Research Board of the National Academies. Modeling Operating Speed, volume E-C151 Synthesis Report of Transportation Research Circular, Washington, D.C., 2011.
[UDoT09] Federal Highway Administration U.S. Department of Transportation. National household travel survey, 2009. http://nhts.ornl.gov.
[WDLH06] J. Wang, K.K. Dixon, H. Li, and M. Hunter. Operating speed model for low-speed urban tangent streets based on in-vehicle global positioning system data. Transportation Research Record: Journal of the Transportation Research Board, 1961:24-33, 2006.
[Whe07] G. Whelan. Modelling car ownership in Great Britain. Transportation Research Part A-Policy and Practice, 41:205-219, 2007.

